

“Are you saying that the Lv family harmed your family and War God Castle defended them? A-are you sure?” The God of War was instantly stunned.

He didn't expect Ye Fan to have such a huge grudge against War God Castle and the Chinese martial arts circles.

“Ye Fan, it must be a misunderstanding. You were serving the country by going to South America, so War God Castle would definitely take care of your kin. How could we make our fighters lose heart by standing by and doing nothing? We thought you were dead when you went missing. We even sent a team to help check on your family. Now you are saying that we aided someone who wanted to hurt your kin. That's absolute garbage! Who told you that?” asked Ye Qing-Tian anxiously as he frowned.

He suddenly recalled something and said, “Wait, now I remember. Someone called Lv Hua coveted your wife about half a year ago. However, I caught the man and sent him to the martial arts court for sentencing. We have already taken care of that, and the culprit was sentenced to death by the courts. Did you have go around killing so many people when no physical harm was done to your wife? Don't you think you're overreacting?”

The God of War spoke deeply with displeasure.

He clearly thought that Ye Fan had slaughtered all those people for what happened six months ago.

He thought that he had already taken care of the matter and had answered to Ye Fan's family.

So now that Ye Fan couldn't let it go and wanted to seek justice on his own, Ye Qing-Tian became very upset.

He felt that Ye Fan was being petty and too eager to kill from the way he wiped out the Lv family over a minor matter that had been taken care of ages ago.

This personality of his was very unlovable.

“Sentenced to death? God of War, do you think I’m an idiot? If Lv Hua was dead, then who was the man wreaking havoc in Jiangdong and bullying my family? Who is the man War God Castle is harboring right now?” asked Ye Fan rhetorically as he laughed coldly.

God of War was stunned. “What do you mean? You mean Lv Hua wasn’t executed back then and he even continued to wreak havoc in Jiangdong?”

Something dawned on Ye Qing-Tian, so he turned to look at the King of Fighters.

“King of Fighters, what's going on? I recall you were handling this. Did you let Lv Hua go?” asked God of War coldly as he suppressed his fury.

All along, only the most serious cases were sent to the martial arts court.

In his memory, no one sent to the martial arts court ever came out alive.

By sending Lv Hua to the martial arts court, it was as good as giving him a death sentence.

From the looks of it now, something had changed

Chapter 1473 Didn't Do the Country Injustice

without his knowledge.

“Well...” The King of Fighters avoided eye contact with the God of War and his voice sounded muffled.

He clearly felt somewhat guilty.

“God of War, we reopened the investigation for the matter. Lv Hua simply admires Ye Fan’s wife. It’s only natural for men to be attracted to pretty women. Don’t you like the Chu Sect leader yourself? A few of us decided that although Lv Hua was in the wrong, he didn’t deserve death. After we punished him, he was repentant, so we spared his life,” explained Mo Gu-Cheng.

He made no mention of how Lv Song-Liang visited him bearing lavish gifts to bribe him.

Ye Fan was already dead back then, so in comparison to the Lv family, Ye Fan’s family was less important.

All the martial artists in charge of sentencing Lv Hua did Lv Song-Liang a favor by only punishing Lv Hua physically before letting him out.

Mo Gu-Cheng didn't tell the God of War about the nitty-gritty. Instead, he simply claimed that Lv Hua didn't deserve to die.

“What? You let him off? That’s nonsense! Regardless of the reason, coveting our fallen heroes’ wives is punishable by death. How could you let him off? Your actions have made him unrepentant, so he went back to Jiangdong and did even worse things. Look what happened now? Ye Fan has already slaughtered his entire family. Are you still not going to hand them over?”

You can't blame Ye Fan for what he did. It all happened thanks to you!" Ye Qing-Tian almost wanted to blow up.

He didn't think that Mo Gu-Cheng and the others would have let Lv Hua go.

Ye Qing-Tian didn't believe Ye Fan when he said that the Lv family had hurt his family and wanted to steal his legacy, but it appeared to be true now.

After Lv Hua escaped the death penalty, he must have harbored a grudge and went back to wreak havoc on Jiangdong even harder.

If someone tried to kill his family, he would probably lose it too.

Now it made sense for Ye Fan to come all the way here to seek justice.

It was the King of Fighters and the rest here who were the fools.

These men had really lived so long for nothing.

"God of War, how can you say that? He was the one who killed those people. What has it got to do with me?"

Ye Qing-Tian spoke so harshly that the King of Fighters' face blanched as he defended himself weakly.

Perhaps out of guilt, the King of Fighters didn't speak too loudly.

But the God of War couldn't be bothered with him.

He glared at the King of Fighters as though he was saying that he would deal with him later.

“Ye Fan, War God Castle was in the wrong. War God Castle neglected its duties by not helping to take good care of your kin while you were out on mission, so you couldn't work with peace of mind. On behalf of War God Castle, I, Ye Qing-Tian, apologize deeply. I will take care of this personally. In three days, justice will be served. As for you, why don't you go back and spend time with your family for now?”

After figuring out what happened, the God of War was no longer angry with Ye Fan. Instead, he was filled with guilt and regret.

After all, Ye Fan was in the right.

The God of War was the one who had asked Ye Fan to go to South America and hunt for the spirit fruit.

Ye Fan went to the Amazon rainforest on behalf of the country and put himself in great danger and almost died.

Everything that Ye Fan said was right. He hadn't done the country any injustice. Instead, it was the country that had let him down.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Ye Fan laughed when he heard what the God of War said. His laughter was filled with ridicule.

“Serve justice? You probably told my wife the same thing when it happened. But what happened in the end? God of War, do you think I will still trust you or War God Castle?” asked Ye Fan rhetorically with a threateningly cold voice.

Ye Fan’s words made the God of War blush crimson.

“Ye Fan, it was my fault, but I won’t make the same mistake the second time. I promise to send Lv Hua to martial arts court personally and watch them sentence him. Nothing will go wrong this time,” said the God of War decisively and almost patted his chest to assure Ye Fan.

However, Ye Fan had no intention of backing off. Instead, he said firmly in a cold tone, “No, thanks. Leave my enemies to me. I hope you will hand them over.”

“Impossible!” The moment Ye Fan finished his sentence, the King of Fighters walked out and spoke sternly.

“How could the mighty War God Castle give in to you? It’s wishful thinking if you think we will hand them over! We are showing you a lot of mercy by letting you leave unscathed without punishing you. I didn’t think that you were an ingrate who kept pushing boundaries. You want War God Castle to hand people over just because you say so? Do you think War God Castle won’t punish you?” Mo Gu-Cheng was furious. His thunderous voice left a raging wind in its wake.

In reality, it was understandable for Mo Gu-Cheng to be

so angry.

After all, Ye Fan's actions at War God Castle had embarrassed them.

War God Castle had already given in to a degree when the God of War offered to help seek justice.

But Ye Fan continued to demand that War God Castle hand those men over to him swiftly.

If word got out that War God Castle gave in to Ye Fan's demands, it would be an embarrassment.

The world might think that War God Castle was afraid of Ye Fan.

This time, Mo Gu-Cheng wasn't alone. Even the God of War was displeased.

He looked at Ye Fan and said deeply, "Ye Fan, we can't hand them to you. I understand how you feel, but you have to empathize with our situation. War God Castle is the highest Chinese martial arts authority and is inviolable. Even if Lv Hua committed wrongdoing, War God Castle should send him over to the martial arts court. We can't hand him over to you. If we give them to you now, how will we ever hold our head high again? What will become of the dignity of the martial arts circles? We can't let you do that."

It was clear from the God of War's deep stern words that there was no room for negotiation.

"In that case, there is nothing for us to discuss," said Ye Fan calmly.

He raised his head with a start as sheer iciness and aggression began to swirl within his deep eyes.

Meanwhile, Ye Fan's energies were soaring at a frightening speed as they gathered.

"Wait, what is this fellow trying to do?"

"Damn it! He's going to fight us? He's going to charge into War God Castle for them?"

"Heavens. He must be insane. The God of War and Sword Saint are right there. He must be tired of living..."

Even though Ye Fan had yet to attack, everyone was stunned by his actions.

Everyone was on the brink of going crazy.

They didn't think that the young man would have the audacity to say such things right in front of four of the pillars of the nation. From the looks of it, he wanted to fight the God of War and the others.

"Ye Fan, what are you doing? Are you nuts? Back off now!"

Tang Hao was startled to see Ye Fan's reaction and instantly tried to talk him out of it.

Other than Ye Qing-Tian, Tang Hao was the only other person in War God Castle who admired Ye Fan.

Tang Hao didn't want Ye Fan to do anything stupid because he admired his talent.

Chapter 1474 Ye Fan, No

After all, the moment Ye Fan fought, it was as good as opposing War God Castle and the entire martial arts circle.

Tang Hao didn't want things to end up this way.

He wasn't alone. The God of War furrowed his brows tightly too.

“Ye Fan, you better think through this carefully. What does it mean to fight us? There is a limit to everyone's tolerance. If you cross the line, even I won't let you off!” reminded Ye Qing-Tian in a deep threatening tone.

Although he admired Ye Fan, it was no excuse for Ye Fan to act rashly.

The moment Ye Fan crossed the line, Ye Qing-Tian would have to hack him apart even if he didn't want to.

It was the nation's fortune to have someone as talented as him.

However, a martial artist who refused to follow the rules did more harm to the country and the world than good.

“Cross the line?” Ye Fan laughed coldly. “You crossed my line first!”

BOOM!

A terrifying boom rang in the air.

Ye Fan's internal energies promptly exploded the moment he finished his sentence.

A dazzling gold light soared into the air.

A dragon roared as his Dragon God Body was activated and a flood of energy swept in all directions.

“God of War, did you see that? This boy is nothing but a fool! In that case, why bother tolerating his actions? Let’s slaughter him now!” shouted King of Fighters after suppressing his fury for a long time.

Sword Saint shook his head. “God of War, people like him don’t deserve your protection. The Chinese martial arts circle doesn't need his protection either. We have tried everything, but he didn't appreciate our actions.”

Sword Saint spoke as a sword flew out from War God Castle and landed in his hands.

The sharp sword glinted threateningly.

From the looks of it, Sword Saint was going to fight as well to help rid the country of this evil.

Ye Qing-Tian fell silent for a long time before he glanced at Ye Fan, then turned back and nodded. “If he attacks, then do as you wish.”

After saying that, he turned away and couldn’t bear to watch the fight.

SWOOSH!

Ye Fan had gathered enough energy. A huge palm was aimed at the King of Fighters and the others and was ready to attack.

Chapter 1474 Ye Fan, No

Just then, a black off-road vehicle drove swiftly up Mount Yan.

A woman hurriedly got off the car with nothing but worry on her face.

From a distance, she shouted to Ye Fan with her eyes red, "Ye Fan, no!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

The woman cried as she ran towards Ye Fan and hugged him tightly from behind.

“Ye Fan, no! Please don't! Let's go home, okay?”

Her face was covered with so many tears that it was heartbreaking to see.

“Mu-Cheng, don't stop me. I will take you home after killing all the people who bullied you. No one can do that to my woman,” said Ye Fan deeply. His voice became slightly more tender when he spoke to Qiu Mu-Cheng.

Simply because she was the woman he swore to protect his entire life.

If the Lv family was after just Ye Fan, he wouldn't have reacted so strongly.

However, they had provoked Ye Fan's wife and family.

The safety of his family was far more important than his life.

Since the Lv family had crossed the line severely, they naturally had to suffer Ye Fan's wrath.

Even if the God of War and the others spoke on the Lv family's behalf, Ye Fan refused to budge an inch.

“Don't do it, Ye Fan. I don't need you to seek revenge. I just want you to be safe and well. I just want to spend a quiet and peaceful life with you. If you end up getting hurt from seeking revenge for me, I'd rather you did not do it. Also, the Lv family has suffered enough. This is already punishment enough. Let's go home, shall we?”

begged Qiu Mu-Cheng with tears welling in her eyes as she hugged Ye Fan tightly.

“No! It isn't enough! The culprit is still alive. How can I stop now?”

Ye Fan's face looked icy cold as his threatening voice rang and left everyone's hair standing in fear.

Ye Fan wasn't a heartless murderer, but he simply couldn't stand the thought of anything happening to his family again.

He would only have a peace of mind if Lv Hua and his entire family was dead.

Otherwise, if Ye Fan was incapable of coming back from Chu Sect in one piece, the tragedy might repeat itself.

After all, no one knew for certain whether Lv Zi-Ming and Lv Hua would seek revenge from Ye Fan's family.

Hence, they had to die!

“Ye Fan, don't do anything stupid. You can't bear the consequences of killing someone within War God Castle. No matter how big the country is, you will have nowhere to hide. Moreover, God of War, Sword Saint, and the others are all here. Are you able to kill them all with pure anger? Why don't you stop before it's too late?” After Qiu Mu-Cheng got off the car, Lu Tian-He stepped down too and persuaded Ye Fan with all this might.

Although Lu Tian-He was commander-in-chief in the army, he was deeply involved in the Chinese martial arts circles.

The massacre that Ye Fan committed at West Lake had caused a huge uproar.

Over a hundred martial artists had been killed.

Many of them were highly respectable elders in the martial arts community.

Hence, this news had completely rocked the Chinese martial arts circle.

Everyone was condemning Ye Fan for his actions, be it online or in some martial arts magazines.

Some of them even described Ye Fan as a demon.

A lot of martial artists had submitted requests to War God Castle's official website asking for Ye Fan to be captured and punished.

Considering the circumstances, there was no way Lu Tian-He wouldn't know of it in Jiangdong.

After he learned of the mistake Ye Fan did, Lu Tian-He contacted his friend at War God Castle and asked for the details.

Before long, he learned that Lv Hua and Lv Zi-Ming were hiding in War God Castle to avoid Ye Fan.

Lu Tian-He's face instantly paled in shock!

After knowing Ye Fan for so long, he was keenly aware of what Ye Fan would do next.

He would definitely end up storming War God Castle and

Chapter 1475 Stop It

demanding for the two men from the Lv family.

Most people probably wouldn't even dream of pulling off something as crazy as this, but Lu Tian-He knew that this young man dared to do exactly what he dared to think of.

In the hope of stopping Ye Fan from any further mistakes, Lu Tian-He and Qiu Mu-Cheng traveled to Yanjing overnight.

Since Ye Fan was doing this for Qiu Mu-Cheng, she was the answer to the problem.

If anyone in the world could stop Ye Fan, it was probably Qiu Mu-Cheng.

However, Ye Fan refused to change his mind despite what Lu Tian-He said.

“I said I don't want to make an enemy of War God Castle. They forced me into this position. Lv Hua must die today no matter who tries to stop me.”

His explosive voice left sand flying in the air.

From the look of it, a battle was unavoidable.

PAK!

The crisp sound of a slap suddenly rang.

Qiu Mu-Cheng had slapped Ye Fan.

The entire world instantly went quiet.

Lu Tian-He was stunned.

Tang Hao and the others were also surprised.

Everyone from War God Castle stared with their eyes wide.

After living for so long, it was the first time they saw an imposing powerful supreme grandmaster end up getting slapped by a frail woman.

It felt unbelievable just thinking about it!

Even Ye Fan was dumbstruck by Qiu Mu-Cheng's slap.

He looked at Qiu Mu-Cheng expressionlessly without saying a word.

However, Qiu Mu-Cheng's tears trickled down uncontrollably.

Even though Ye Fan was the one who took the slap, her heart felt the pain.

"Ye Fan, why are you so stubborn? Why do you still refuse to listen to me? Why can't you think about Mum and me? Have you ever considered me your wife at all?" Qiu Mu-Cheng shouted as she wept and aired her grievances.

He clearly knew that her greatest fear was to see him hurt or to lose him, but the man repeatedly endangered himself without taking her advice.

Qiu Mu-Cheng started to cry the moment she finished her sentence.

After she broke into tears, her voice became tender.

Chapter 1475 Stop It

“Ye Fan, can you stop? Come home with me. Mum is waiting for you at home. Please, will you? Stop fighting. I almost lost you once, and I can't go through this again.” Qiu Mu-Cheng cried torrents as she begged him.

Lu Tian-He did his utmost to talk Ye Fan out of it. “She’s right, Ye Fan. Stop doing this. Stop acting on impulse. War God Castle represents the country. Do you think you can oppose the country singlehandedly?”

Ye Fan said nothing and only stood there quietly.

Ye Qing-Tian said once more, “Ye Fan, if you are willing to leave, I won't hold you accountable for your actions. I will still hand the Lv family members to the martial arts court.”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Cold wind gusted, leaving leaves twirling in its wake.

Ye Qing-Tian's deep voice echoed in the air.

However, Ye Fan remained silent.

Qiu Mu-Cheng hugged Ye Fan tightly out of fear he might do something wrong on impulse.

The stunning woman stood with the sand flying around with tears on her face.

After some time, the threatening look in Ye Fan's eyes disappeared.

He reached his hand out to wipe the tears from the corner of Qiu Mu-Cheng's eyes and said quietly, "Mu-Cheng, let's go home."

"Really?" Qiu Mu-Cheng's teary face instantly broke into a smile.

She felt like someone walking in the darkness who had found light.

"Uh huh. Let's go home."

Ye Fan smiled gently. His smile was filled with tenderness.

"Okay, let's go home. Mum must be really anxious, so let's go back now," said Qiu Mu-Cheng happily before she quickly walked to the car with Ye Fan.

She seemed worried that Ye Fan might change his mind.

After Ye Fan sent Qiu Mu-Cheng up the car, he suddenly turned to look at Ye Qing-Tian and the others. "God of War, I will trust you one final time. I'll be waiting for War God Castle's explanation in Jiangdong."

Ye Fan raised his head and looked at Ye Qing-Tian in the eye.

His deep voice was inexplicably cold.

From the looks of it, if War God Castle was unable to give Ye Fan a satisfactory answer, he would storm this place again.

Ye Fan got into the car and headed back to Jiangdong with Qiu Mu-Cheng.

"God of War, are you letting him leave just like that? Don't you know that he killed over a hundred martial artists at West Lake? There are probably over a thousand martial artists in China in total, so the kid has killed 10% of the martial artists in the country. He deserves to be hanged, drawn and quartered for his crime. Also, he was rude to War God Castle and disrespected the pillars of the nation. If you don't kill him now, he will only end up causing disaster for us," the King of Fighters roared at Ye Qing-Tian furiously and felt puzzled by his decision.

He remained indignant even after Ye Fan was gone.

However, Ye Qing-Tian sneered, "Humph! Where do you even find the gall to say this? If you hadn't abused your power and let Lv Hua go, would this have happened? He Chen, Lv Song-Liang, and over a hundred martial artists have died thanks to you!"

Ye Qing-Tian's scolding made Mo Gu-Cheng blush crimson and left him speechless.

He put on a bold front and retorted stubbornly, "God of War, how could you say that? Was it my fault? I didn't break any rules. Lv Hua might have done wrong, but he didn't deserve to die."

"You know best whether he deserved death or not!" Ye Qing-Tian angrily roared before he turned to enter the hall behind him. He couldn't be bothered with Mo Gu-Cheng anymore.

Lv Hua and Lv Zi-Ming hid in the main hall.

Despite the protection of the King of Fighters and the others, Lv Hua couldn't help feeling worried.

"Dad, do you think King of Fighters and the others will hand us over?" asked Lv Hua worriedly.

Lv Zi-Ming comforted him, "Don't worry. Ye Fan committed such heinous crimes, so I'm sure War God Castle can't wait to execute him. Why would they hand us over to him? Also, do you think it's possible for War God Castle to bow to a youngster like him?" Lv Zi-Ming sounded composed.

After all, War God Castle was the highest authority in the Chinese martial arts circle.

Ye Fan couldn't do anything to them as long as they were inside War God Castle and under its protection.

Chapter 1476 Let's Go Home

“But Dad, we were at fault in this matter, and I was the one who tried to harm Ye Fan’s family first. If Ye Fan tells War God Castle about it, would they still help us?” Lv Hua’s fears didn’t dissipate after he heard what his father said. Instead, they only intensified.

He deeply regretted coveting Ye Fan’s wife and wanting to steal his legacy.

It was his fault that his entire family was now dead.

The more Lv Hua thought about it, the guiltier he felt. Before long, his eyes had turned red.

Lv Zi-Ming patted Lv Hua’s shoulder and consoled him, “It’s fine. Everything will be fine. In comparison to Ye Fan’s crime, what you did was nothing. Maybe Ye Fan has already been slaughtered.”

The door suddenly opened, and Ye Qing-Tian entered.

“God of War? Haha! God of War is here! Ye Fan stands no chance now. We are safe now. Hurry up and thank the God of War with me.”

Lv Zi-Ming was instantly delighted to see Ye Qing-Tian.

Lv Hua and his father had been worried that the King of Fighters might not be able to overcome Ye Fan. Now that the God of War had returned, their fear dissipated.

After all, the God of War was the most powerful martial artist in China and was deeply respected in the Chinese martial arts circles.

With the God of War around, they wouldn't have a

problem dealing with Ye Fan.

They stepped forward to thank the God of War, but before Lv Zi-Ming and Lv Hua said a word, they were surprisingly kicked into the air by the God of War with a loud thud.

Their hefty bodies were viciously thrown against the wall behind before sliding to the ground.

Lv Hua moaned as he coughed blood instantly from the grave injuries.

“God of War, w-why did you...”

Lv Zi-Ming was startled and perplexed.

Lv Hua felt puzzled too. He raised his head to look at Ye Qing-Tian quizzically as bright red blood trickled from his lips.

“Why? You still have the cheek to ask? Half a year ago, I warned you not to covet the widows of our fallen comrades. How dare you bring harm to Ye Fan’s family! After you escaped death, you were unrepentant and did even more harm in Jiangdong and on Ye Fan’s kin. Who gave you the gall to bring harm upon a supreme grandmaster’s family? Look at what happened in the end! This has result in the death of your entire family and hundreds of martial artists at your grandfather’s banquet! Scum like you deserve to die a thousand times over!”

BOOM...

Ye Qing-Tian shouted in fury once more, and it sounded

Chapter 1476 Let's Go Home

more like a thunderous explosion.

Ly Hua and his father were already suffering grave injuries from crashing into the wall earlier. After Ye Qing-Tian roared again, they were sent flying from the force of his voice and couldn't stop throwing up blood.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

“Men, send Lv Hua to the martial arts court to await sentencing!”

The God of War immediately ordered for Lv Hua to get taken to the martial arts court for sentencing.

Lv Hua lost all hope when he heard what the God of War said.

“No!! Don’t send me there! I don’t want to go to the martial arts court! Save me, Dad!” roared Lv Hua desperately as he cried.

His eyes were filled with intense fear.

But was it any use to shout and cry?

He ended up getting taken away by force.

“God of War, please let him go. We are the victims here. Since we are the Azure Sky’s kin, War God Castle is obligated to protect us. Why are you taking my boy? He’s the only surviving offspring in the family!” begged Lv Zi-Ming as he knelt on the ground.

Initially, Lv Zi-Ming thought they were safe if they got to War God Castle.

He never dreamt that things would turn out this way.

“How dare you ask me this question? You know best what you did. How dare you try to harm the family of a supreme grandmaster? It was thanks to you that your family ended up like this. You have no one to blame but yourselves!” The God of War coldly sneered before he turned to leave without bothering about them.

The night passed in silence.

The next day, Sword Saint, the King of Fighters, Tang Hao, and the God of War gathered at Mount Yan to have a meeting to discuss what to do with Ye Fan and Lv Hua.

From War God Castle's perspective, Lv Hua's punishment didn't matter.

It was harder for War God Castle to decide what to do with Ye Fan.

"Sword Saint, we can't let Ye Fan off easy! Even if he had good reason, it is no excuse for him to kill over a hundred martial artists. The families of the deceased martial artists are now knocking on our doors. They want us to punish Ye Fan severely and seek justice for the dead. We have to speak up about this. Otherwise, the Chinese martial arts circle will lose faith in us," said the King of Fighters sternly as coldness radiated from him.

Even after one night, the swelling on the King of Fighters' face didn't diminish completely. Instead, there was now a burning sensation.

Ye Fan had slapped the King of Fighters really hard the night before.

He spent the night in pain, so he hated Ye Fan even more now.

If the God of War didn't stop him, he would have gone to Jiangdong to hack Ye Fan to pieces.

The King of Fighters had never suffered such a major humiliation all his life.

Chapter 1477 A Meeting at War God Castle

The moment the King of Fighters finished his words, Tang Hao helped to defend Ye Fan, "Ye Fan isn't entirely to blame. The Lv family was the one who tried to harm Ye Fan's family first. Those martial artists also ended up getting killed because they wanted to attack Ye Fan. From this perspective, Ye Fan merely acted in self-defense. Do you expect him to stand around and get slaughtered by them? I think we shouldn't blame Ye Fan for this."

"That's pure nonsense!" the King of Fighters retorted sternly. "How could one hundred lives have nothing to do with him? Tang Hao, has a dog eaten your conscience? The truth is sitting right in front of you, but you continue to defend Ye Fan."

His deep roaring exploded like thunder, causing the entire hall to shake.

"Mo Gu-Cheng, mind your words! If you keep talking to me this way, don't blame me for being rude." Tang Hao was annoyed too.

After all, Mo Gu-Cheng was so harsh with his words that it was no different from blatantly cursing him.

If Mo Gu-Cheng didn't look so pitiful after that slap from Ye Fan the night before, Tang Hao would have just fallen out with him on the spot.

"Why, you want to fight me too? It appears that everyone thinks I'm a pushover just because they don't know my true prowess. So you want to humiliate me as well after that kid insulted me last night? Bring it on!" Mo Gu-Cheng had suppressed his anger for too long.

He was so agitated that he lit up like a bucket of explosives.

Tang Hao had only said a few things, but Mo Gu-Cheng instantly exploded and wanted Tang Hao to step out for a fight.

“Enough! Aren't things chaotic enough?” shouted Sword Saint and stopped them from continuing their argument.

Ye Qing-Tian replied expressionlessly in a cold voice, “You can decide how to punish him. Since you are the leader of War God Castle, you have to consider the consequences before you act. Ye Fan could survive attacks from two supreme grandmasters while he was out in South America. It's clear that the boy has immense potential. Let's not forget that Brahma is stronger than you. So, think about it carefully.”

“Also, I won't get involved in any actions against Ye Fan since I have done him injustice. If I hadn't asked him to go to South America, things wouldn't have ended up like this.”

Ye Qing-Tian sighed sadly.

Despite being a mentally strong man, he surprisingly felt guilty and regretful.

To a certain degree, he was the cause of these problems.

If he hadn't asked Ye Fan to go or if he had done a good job of protecting Ye Fan's family while he was gone, Ye Fan wouldn't have ended up causing such a disaster.

The God of War kept giving in to Ye Fan out of guilt.

Even if Ye Fan violated War God Castle and charged inside last night, the God of War was still planning to let him leave in one piece.

After saying these words, the God of War turned to leave.

It was unnecessary for him to take part in the rest of the meeting now.

The King of Fighters was delighted that the God of War was going to stay out of this. "Sword Saint, give the order. Since God of War isn't going to get involved, it will be easy as pie to kill Ye Fan."

The King of Fighters couldn't wait to sabotage Ye Fan and waited excitedly for Sword Saint to give orders to kill Ye Fan.

But to his surprise, Sword Saint shockingly shook his head. "Never mind. Let's give him a chance."

What?

"Sword Saint. why are you on his side too?"

The King of Fighters instantly opened his eyes wide in disbelief.

He didn't expect Sword Saint to give in to Ye Fan.

"Sword Saint, we can't let him off so easily! Otherwise, he will think that War God Castle is afraid of him. In the future, he will continue to go around breaking the rules even more."

Chapter 1477 A Meeting at War God Castle



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

“Then what do you suggest?” Sword Saint threw the question back in an icy cold voice.

“Do you want to summon all six pillars of the nation to kill Ye Fan? Phoenix Empress and Ice Emperor have gone missing for decades, and no one knows if they are dead or alive. Even if I summoned them, do you think they will see it? Also, God of War has said he isn’t going to kill Ye Fan with us. Considering the circumstances, how do you suggest we kill him?”

Sword Saint asked the King of Fighters a slew of questions coldly as he tried hard to suppress his anger.

No one knew whether Sword Saint was angry with Ye Fan or with the King of Fighters.

“What about the three of us? I’m quite sure that three pillars of the nation are enough to take him out!” said Mo Gu-Cheng. He clearly resented the idea of letting Ye Fan off.

“The three of us?” Sword Saint shook his head. “You think there are three of us?”

“Huh?” Mo Gu-Cheng was confused for a moment before he realized what Sword Saint meant, and turned to look at Tang Hao.

Sure enough, Tang Hao shrugged. “Don’t look at me. I’m with God of War on this. I won’t oppose any decision you make, but I won’t take part in it.”

“Tang Hao, you...” Mo Gu-Cheng trembled in anger when he heard this. “Perfect! Just perfect! So be it! Did you think you were a big deal? Nothing will happen to War

God Castle without you around!”

After the King of Fighters scolded Tang Hao, he turned to look at Sword Saint. “Sword Saint, if they refused to do it, we can do it on our own. With my fist technique and your sword technique, even if Ye Fan was immortal, we can definitely kill him!” the King of Fighters spoke stubbornly with his bloodshot eyes.

He was simply obsessed with killing Ye Fan.

It was evident how much Mo Gu-Cheng hated Ye Fan.

“Enough!” Instead, Sword Saint shouted at Mo Gu-Cheng angrily.

His stern voice sounded thunderous and left Mo Gu-Cheng shaking speechlessly.

“Regardless of how strong we are, are we any stronger than Brahma or Gaia? Even if we fight together, we might only manage a draw against them. They didn't manage to kill Ye Fan even after fighting him together. You think two of us will succeed? If we are unable to kill Ye Fan with our combined efforts, isn't War God Castle going to become an even bigger laughingstock?” Sword Saint's angry words reverberated through the atmosphere.

Mo Gu-Cheng finally went quiet.

All of his anger and impulse gradually faded.

After calming himself down, it dawned on the King of Fighters how risky it was to kill Ye Fan.

After all, the moment martial artists became supreme

grandmasters, it was almost impossible to kill them.

If they could kill Ye Fan with a single blow, there was still a chance.

The moment Ye Fan managed to escape death, he would come back and seek revenge.

Supreme grandmasters could become quite a terror if they lost it.

Many years ago, a supreme grandmaster wiped out an entire nation in his rage.

Millions of people died at his hand!

That was why the God of War had warned Sword Saint to consider the consequences before deciding on Ye Fan's punishment.

Did he really want to have a grudge with a supreme grandmaster for the sake of the Lv family, the deceased martial artists, or his fleeting dignity?

Or was he willing to make up with Ye Fan for the sake of the country and the Chinese martial arts circle?

It wasn't really a tough choice.

The King of Fighters lowered his head in silence for some time.

The entire War God Castle went quiet.

After a long time, Sword Saint finally composed himself.

Chapter 1478 The Final Decision

He picked up a teacup, poured the King of Fighters a drink, and brought it over to him. He said calmly, "King of Fighters, I can understand why you hate Ye Fan after he attacked and offended you. I don't have a good impression of him either. I certainly don't like his arrogance. However, we are his elders, so we shouldn't lower ourselves to his level."

"Although Ye Fan brutally massacred people at West Lake, God of War was right. Ye Fan isn't entirely to blame. We were careless and failed to protect his family, so we are at fault as well. Since it's partly our fault, why get angry with a young man? He is still young and wild. Didn't we also do a lot of wild things in our youth?"

"If Ye Fan has any conscience and the ability to tell right from wrong, what's so bad about giving him a chance? Moreover, after the chaos in Jiangbei, we are short of martial artists. A grandmaster and a supreme grandmaster have already died. A lot of other martial artists also perished in the lake. It isn't a wise choice to drive a supreme grandmaster away at this point in time."

Sword Saint first attempted to strike fear in the King of Fighters before lowering himself to persuade him. He wanted to make the King of Fighters stop thinking about killing Ye Fan.

The King of Fighters said nothing for a long time.

No one knew what the King of Fighters was thinking now.

In the end, the King of Fighters compromised.

"You decide," replied the King of Fighters softly before he

turned to leave.

Sword Saint shook his head and deeply sighed as he watched the King of Fighters leave.

“Sigh. His temper hasn’t changed one bit all these years. He gets angry so easily.”

“Exactly. This old fellow is way too stubborn. He even dares to oppose God of War once he’s angered. Only you have any patience for him,” said Tang Hao as he walked over and smiled powerlessly.

After being around each other for so many years, they were close friends despite their countless arguments.

Everyone knew each other's temperament well.

Hence, no one was surprised by the King of Fighters’ reaction.

“But seriously, letting Lv Hua off was a really dumb thing to do on his part,” said Tang Hao quietly.

This tragedy could have been avoided.

Sadly, everything culminated in that tragic massacre at West Lake.

Could they blame Ye Fan for everything?

Certainly not.

Neither the God of War, Sword Saint, the King of Fighters, nor Heavenly Grandmaster could escape blame.

Forgiving Ye Fan was as good as forgiving themselves.

“Let go of me! I want to go inside! I’m the Azure Sky’s son! My father was a pillar of the nation! How dare you stop me? Let me in! I want to see the King of Fighters! I want to see Sword Saint!”

A commotion suddenly came from outside the hall as Sword Saint and Tang Hao chatted.

Lv Zi-Ming roared like a lunatic as he charged towards the hall with utter disregard.

It didn’t take long for the guards outside War God Castle to stop him.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

“Let go of me! Let go of me! I want to go in! I’m here to see King of Fighters,” shouted Lv Zi-Ming outside the hall.

If no one was there to stop him, he would have charged into War God Castle by now.

Sword Saint and the others clearly heard the commotion. Tang Hao frowned instantly. “Who’s making this racket outside War God Castle?”

Tang Hao walked out of War God Castle and wanted to chase Lv Zi-Ming away.

However, Sword Saint suddenly stopped him.

“Never mind. Let him in.”

“What?” Tang Hao was slightly surprised. “Didn’t you already decide not to punish Ye Fan? Why do you still need to talk to someone from the Lv family? He might even lose it if he learns what we’re going to do with Ye Fan.”

Tang Hao didn’t know what Sword Saint was trying to do.

Ye Fan and the Lv family were already sworn enemies.

Since War God Castle had decided not to punish Ye Fan, that meant that the Lv family would be on the losing end.

It was definitely unwise to see someone from the Lv family in this situation.

Sword Saint shook his head and said in a deep voice, “The Lv family were leaders of the martial arts circles in

Jiangbei, so we have to pacify them. Otherwise, the powers of Jiangbei might get upset.”

Since Sword Saint was the leader of War God Castle, he had to think about the big picture.

Now that such a catastrophe had happened in Jiangbei, many people felt upset about it.

If anything went wrong, it would bring chaos to the martial arts circle.

Sword Saint didn't want that to happen.

No matter what, he had to appease the Lv family.

As long as Lv Zi-Ming didn't take the lead to make trouble, things ought to be fine.

“That’s true.” Tang Hao nodded in agreement and felt that Sword Saint made sense.

“But it will probably be tough to do that,” sighed Tang Hao.

Tang Hao knew why Lv Zi-Ming wanted to see them.

He probably wanted to request for the protection of Lv Hua’s life and for War God Castle to kill Ye Fan to avenge their family.

However, War God Castle was probably incapable of doing either.

Executing Ye Fan was completely out of the question. After careful consideration, Sword Saint and the others

decided that they couldn't kill Ye Fan even if they were capable of doing it.

There was a chance that Sword Saint would be willing to spare Lv Hua's life.

But what about Ye Fan?

Would Ye Fan stop if Lv Hua didn't die?

Ye Fan would probably storm right into War God Castle to hunt down Lv Hua again.

"It's going to be hard." Another sigh came.

Tang Hao walked out and told the guards to let Lv Zi-Ming go and send him in.

Many people had gathered at the foot of Mount Yan.

They were family members of those who had died at West Lake.

They knelt on the ground and held up banners that read in blood-red characters: "Justice for the dead! Kill Ye Fan!"

.....

"Please seek justice for the dead, War God Castle!"

.....

Everyone held banners as they implored War God Castle to avenge their loved ones.

Chapter 1479 Justice for the Dead

A thousand miles away in Jiangdong, there was complete peace while the commotion was taking place on Mount Yan.

After Ye Fan returned to Jiangdong, he brought Qiu Mu-Cheng and his mother back to Yunzhou.

Qiu Mu-Cheng had left Yunzhou in order to avoid attacks from the Lv family.

But now, Ye Fan had destroyed the Lv clan completely, and only Lv Zi-Ming and Lv Hua were alive.

Hence, the Lv family's days of glory were over. Even if Ye Fan wasn't around, it was impossible for them to threaten Ye Fan's kin.

Since the threat was eradicated, Ye Fan brought them home.

Mount Yunding Villa finally came back to life after it had been abandoned for months.

Laughter could often be heard from the villa, and the scent of food could be smelled in the air in the evening.

Qiu Mu-Cheng was the one cooking.

During the year Ye Fan was away, Qiu Mu-Cheng's culinary skills improved by leaps and bounds and could now compare with Ye Xi-Mei's.

Their home was broken when Ye Fan died. Now that he had returned, it felt blissful and happy again.

After spending some time with Ye Fan, Qiu Mu-Cheng returned to work at Mufan Group.

Ye Xi-Mei was transferred to a hospital in Fenghai for recuperation.

Someone had to stand at the helm of the Fenghai branch office after all.

Ye Xi-Mei hadn't turned up for work in six months, so she was worried that her younger brothers would destroy the business. Thus, she transferred to a hospital in Fenghai to supervise business while she recuperated.

"Mum, are you really going back? I've already sent someone to take care of the company, so there's nothing to worry about."

His mother hadn't fully recovered yet, so he didn't like the idea of her leaving Yunzhou.

"It's fine. I feel much better after you gave me treatment. I haven't gone back in six months, so it's about time I go back to see your grandfather and check on the business. Don't worry about me. Spend more time with Mu-Cheng after I'm gone. You owe her so much. If you do anything to let her down, I will kill you," said Ye Xi-Mei angrily to Ye Fan before she left.

Since she had decided to return to Fenghai, Ye Fan couldn't keep her.

Before long, Ye Xi-Mei left Yunzhou in a car.

"Mu-Cheng, let's go back inside. It's time to reapply the medication for your scar."

After Ye Xi-Mei left, Ye Fan and Qiu Mu-Cheng went back into the villa.

Over the past few days, other than using his skills to help his mother recover, Ye Fan helped to treat the scar on Qiu Mu-Cheng's forehead as well.

Such a scar would normally be permanent for most people, but it wasn't hard for Ye Fan to treat it.

Ye Fan even went to the old Chu residence to ask his great grandmother a few questions and take some medicine to ensure Qiu Mu-Cheng would recover fully.

After a few days, Qiu Mu-Cheng's scar had certainly lightened a lot.

"Ye Fan, can this scar really be removed completely?" asked Qiu Mu-Cheng as she looked at the faint scar in the mirror.

All women were vain, and Qiu Mu-Cheng was no different.

Although she never mentioned it to Ye Fan, she was certainly bothered by it.

"Don't worry. Your husband is very talented. I can even bring people back from the dead, so what's one tiny scar? In seven days, you will recover completely." Ye Fan laughed as he rubbed Qiu Mu-Cheng's nose lovingly.

Chapter 1479 Justice for the Dead



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

After they returned to the villa, Ye Fan changed Qiu Mu-Cheng's dressing with care.

He wanted her to stay home and rest, but the silly girl insisted on returning to the office.

Life still had to go on.

She couldn't set her work aside because she wanted to spend more time with Ye Fan.

Mufan Group might not mean much to Ye Fan, but its significance to Qiu Mu-Cheng was only second to that of Ye Fan.

This company was the result of Ye Fan's hard labors.

She would willingly spend the rest of her life watching over and guarding Ye Fan's life work.

Qiu Mu-Cheng knew that she was of no help to Ye Fan when it came to the martial arts circle.

The only thing that she could do for Ye Fan was to watch over Mufan Group.

That explained why Qiu Mu-Cheng had stubbornly stood her ground against the Lv family, a powerful martial arts family, during Ye Fan's year of absence.

She had only been sent to the military by Lu Tian-He for her safety as a last resort.

Ye Fan did not stop Qiu Mu-Cheng since she had insisted on going back to the office. Instead, he drove her there personally.

He did not linger at Mufan Group and instead returned to Mount Yunding Villa immediately.

He summoned Li Er.

“Mr Chu, did you...ask for me?”

Li Er felt fear instinctively even though Ye Fan had not said a word. He could not help the stammer in his voice.

He had clearly heard about what Ye Fan had done in Jiangbei.

He had slaughtered the Lv clan, the most powerful family in Jiangbei.

He had killed more than a hundred martial artists mercilessly at West Lake.

Even though he had not seen it with his own eyes, Li Er had still been terrified by the sheer massacre.

He had known Ye Fan for more than two years.

Li Er could not imagine the power that Ye Fan had amassed within the brief period of time and how he had grown from a meek young man of low stature who had married into the Qiu family into someone so powerful.

He had destroyed a powerful clan so easily.

The terrifying extent of Ye Fan's power had exceeded Li Er's imagination.

Li Er could feel nothing but awe for Ye Fan now.

"That's right." Ye Fan nodded slightly before picking a cup of tea from the table and sipping lightly at it. "You've heard of what happened in Jiangbei, haven't you?"

Ye Fan continued sipping at his tea. He did not look at Li Er while he spoke.

Something flickered across Li Er's eyes. He had no idea why Ye Fan was asking him this all of a sudden. Nevertheless, he decided to answer the young man honestly. "I've heard some news."

"Well, share what you think about what you've heard," said Ye Fan.

Li Er answered hastily. "The Lv family exploited their wealth and insulted Mr Chu's family first. They deserved what they got. Even if Mr Chu had not destroyed the Lv family, I would have tried to eliminate them to seek justice for Miss Qiu and Mdm Ye."

Li Er knew his way around his words and was quick to speak what he knew would please Ye Fan.

Ye Fan rolled his eyes in mild exasperation. "I wasn't asking you about that. I wanted your opinion on the Lv family business in Jiangbei."

"Well..." Li Er froze, then said sheepishly. "I have not thought about that. Let me go back and deliberate on the matter. I'll submit a proposal to you tomorrow."

Ye Fan shook his head.

"That's no need for that. I heard that Chen Ao took up residence in Jiangbei after he left Jiangdong. Tell him

Chapter 1480 Ye Fan's Might

that on account of his daughter, I'm giving him another chance to prove himself. You can provide him with the appropriate and necessary resources, as much as is required, to help him gain control over Jiangbei. It's up to him to make the chance count. Do you understand what I'm saying?" Ye Fan eyed Li Er.

Li Er was delighted and laughed.

"Thank you, Mr Chu. I'll tell Chen Ao as soon as I get back. It won't be long before both Jiangbei and Jiangdong fall under the command of Mr Chu."

Li Er and Chen Ao shared a friendship that spanned more than a decade.

Chen Ao had made a blunder and picked the wrong side during the previous crisis in Jiangdong. As a result, he had been expelled from Jiangdong by Ye Fan.

But Li Er had been keeping in contact with Chen Ao for the past year or so.

They were friends, after all. When Li Er had been down on his luck, Chen Ao had helped him too. Now that Chen Ao was down on his luck, Li Er would naturally help him out and make sure that he got by.

But that had been all that Li Er had done.

Compared to the king who had once ruled over Jiangdong, Chen Ao was now barely getting by in a foreign land. He was in a pitiful state.

As his friend, Li Er sympathized with Chen Ao's plight.

But without Ye Fan's permission, Li Er couldn't help Chen Ao too much.

Now that Ye Fan had given the word and was giving Chen Ao a chance to prove himself, Li Er was naturally happy for his friend.

In his midst of excitement, Li Er excused himself immediately and made plans to head for Jiangbei to share this good news with Chen Ao.

"Li Er might be a little timid but he's a good friend," Ye Fan smiled and shook his head as he watched the excited Li Er leave.

But the man came back within moments.

The joy and excitement on his face had been replaced by grave concern.

"Something wrong?" Ye Fan raised his eyebrow.

Li Er nodded. "Mr Chu, please don't blame me for being nosy. I'm just worried. Even though the Lv family deserved what they got, but the fact remains that you've killed a lot of people. Will the government come after you? Should you make a gesture of submission, take a trip to War God Castle and apologize to them personally? On account of your sincere admission to having made a mistake, the government would not exact too heavy a punishment on you."

This had been Li Er's greatest worry since he had found out about the bloodbath that Ye Fan had caused in Jiangbei.

He had been worried that the government might send someone to deal with Ye Fan.

As the Chinese saying went, the commoner would not fight with a government official and a citizen would not fight with a state.

This cultural mindset which had been passed down for thousands of years in China had long been ingrained in the minds of every Chinese person.

Li Er would not be the only person who thought so. Qiu Mu-Cheng, Ye Xi-Mei and the other 1.4 billion Chinese citizens probably believed similarly that an individual would never be able to take on a country and win.

Ye Fan had caused a lot of trouble in Jiangbei. The Chinese martial arts circle wasn't going to just stand by and do nothing.

Even though Li Er had not seen War God Castle do anything about the incident yet, that didn't mean anything. A late storm oftentimes was the fiercer for it.

After some hesitation, Li Er had finally decided to persuade Ye Fan to make a trip to Yanjing and extend an apology to War God Castle.

But Ye Fan simply laughed when he heard what Li Er had said.

He picked his cup of tea up and took a sip. "You worry too much. War God Castle can't touch me, and won't dare to touch me either."

His words were spoken leisurely and calmly.

Chapter 1480 Ye Fan's Might

Yet, they were powerful words that blew Li Er away when he heard them.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

That was the epitome of might! War God Castle couldn't touch him and wouldn't dare to touch him.

Ye Fan might be the only man in the whole of China who dared speak this way.

Li Er trembled when he heard Ye Fan's words. He dared not utter a single sound.

His eyelid twitched violently. After a long moment of silence, he spoke. "Mr Chu, just to play safe, why don't you make a trip to War God Castle?"

He clearly did not believe what Ye Fan had just said.

In his view, Ye Fan had caused a serious commotion in Jiangbei. War God Castle would not simply stand by and do nothing.

Besides, Li Er had heard that many people in Jiangbei had headed for Yanjing to request the government to step in and seek justice for those who had died by Ye Fan's hand.

The upper echelons of the Chinese martial arts circle might be planning Ye Fan's capture right at this moment.

In fact, the martial artists from War God Castle might already be on their way.

Should Ye Fan be captured by the government, his assets in Jiangdong would be seized by the government swiftly.

Li Er would find himself in a terrible predicament then.

He had worked for Ye Fan for years and could no longer

dissociate himself from Ye Fan.

They were bound in both glory and shame, triumph and defeat.

If Ye Fan were to fall from his pedestal, Li Er, Lei San and the others would not survive for long.

His concern for Ye Fan and for his own interests was the reason why Li Er hoped that Ye Fan would make a trip to Mount Yan and apologize to War God Castle so that he might earn a more forgiving punishment from the country.

Ye Fan appeared slightly displeased by Li Er's tireless persuasion though.

He frowned. "There's no need to play safe. I told you. War God Castle can't touch and won't dare to touch me. Besides, they're the ones who have to make it up to me."

Li Er froze momentarily before asking in confusion. "Make it up to you? How?"

"By killing Lv Hua and his father, of course. I'm not going to stop until Lv Hua is dead!" Ye Fan said mercilessly.

What?

Li Er trembled violently. His eyes widened.

He stared at the young man before him like he would a ghost. "Mr Chu...do you still intend to kill more people? Do you think that War God Castle is going to allow you to do that?"

Li Er was utterly dumbstruck.

He wasn't sure who was the crazy one. Was it him or Ye Fan?

Honestly, Li Er had found it incredulous that War God Castle had not punished Ye Fan for the huge trouble that he had caused in Jiangbei.

Yet here was Ye Fan, demanding that War God Castle kill Lv Hua and his father as recompense.

It seemed unlikely that they would do that!

War God Castle couldn't possibly give in to Ye Fan's demand.

War God Castle represented the entire Chinese martial arts circle.

Ye Fan was but one man. Why would an entire nation of martial artists give in to the demands of one man?

In fact, Li Er believed that War God Castle would only think Ye Fan arrogant and presumptuous because of his demands and hate him more.

"You can't do that, Mr Chu. Please don't tell them that these are your demands. Because of your massacre in Jiangbei, there are many people who are voicing their unhappiness and demanding that the nation punish you heavily for what you did. If you were to make open demands of War God Castle now, your actions are only going to be construed as disrespect for War God Castle. They will only serve to provoke War God Castle further. Please don't try to demand anything from them, Mr Chu!"

Chapter 1481 A Call from War God Castle

Li Er was filled with anxiety and horror.

Young people didn't seem to consider the consequences of their actions at all. Everything they did were governed by impulse. Such was the folly of youth!

He was terrified that Ye Fan would do something impulsive again and land them in a mess that they could not get out of.

"It's too late. I've told them and they are to let me have an answer today. If they do not give me one tonight, I'll make a trip to Mount Yan tomorrow and kill Lv Hua myself," said Ye Fan in a chilly tone.

The deaths of more than a hundred members of the Lv family clan had not appeased him. His fury would not fade until Lv Hua was dead.

Lv Hua was the one who had started it all after all.

Ye Fan would not rest until he was dead.

"What? You've...already told them?" Li Er was devastated. His eyes were red with terror and worry while his wails filled the room. "We're done for! We're finished...Mr Chu, you've made a terrible mistake. Our state isn't going to give in to a single man. You're forcing War God Castle to kill you...War God Castle isn't going to give you any recompense. They're going to hunt you down!"

At that moment, Li Er was truly convinced that Jiangdong and Ye Fan were both doomed.

It was then that the phone in Ye Fan's house rang.

Ye Fan waited for the phone to ring three times before he walked over, answered the call and put it on speakerphone.

“Mr Chu, this is an emergency. Why are you answering the phone right now? You have to escape with Miss Qiu before War God Castle arrives. Go overseas! I have a few properties in America. I’ll send you the address. You can hide out in one of those properties. As long as you’re still alive, your empire in Jiangdong won’t fall. War God Castle won’t dare to cause too much trouble in Jiangdong,” Li Er said as he tugged Ye Fan towards the door.

He knew that War God Castle would remain wary of Ye Fan and wouldn’t dare to exterminate Ye Fan’s allies in Jiangdong as long as Ye Fan was alive.

They would have to suffer the terrible consequences if a supreme grandmaster was pushed too far and flew into a mad rage.

“Is this Ye Fan? This is the Heavenly Grandmaster, Tang Hao speaking. We’ve met in Jiangdong before. Do you still remember me?”

A deep masculine voice sounded from the other end of the line while Li Er panicked.

Li Er’s face turned pale instantly.

He had not expected War God Castle to call.

Were they already here?

Despair threatened to overwhelm Li Er.

Ye Fan couldn't run even if he wanted to.

"That's right, this is Ye Fan speaking," Ye Fan replied calmly as Li Er floundered in terror and despair next to him.

"I wish to discuss the matter of Lv Hua with you. You've decimated the Lv clan and killed the head of the Lv family, Lv Song-Liang. They've paid a heavy price for what they'd done. Could you spare Lv Hua's life? He's the only remaining descendant of the Lv clan. Let bygones be bygones and spare his life."

Tang Hao appeared to be negotiating with Ye Fan.

What he had said sent Li Er reeling with shock.

Was this man really one of the upper echelons of War God Castle?

Was he hearing one of the most powerful martial artists who had command over the Chinese martial arts circle speak to Ye Fan in an almost deferential manner?



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

“How did it go? Did he agree to spare Lv Hua’s life?”

In War God Castle on Mount Yan, Tang Hao had just ended his conversation with Ye Fan and hung up.

Sword Saint rushed up to Tang Hao immediately and peppered him with a flurry of questions.

Tang Hao sighed and shook his head. “I’ve told you that this was going to be a waste of our time. Ye Fan killed hundreds of people in Jiangbei because he wanted Lv Hua dead. Do you think he’s going to spare the life of the Lv family’s young master that easily?”

Sword Saint stiffened. “He refused? Even though you were the one who asked?”

Actually, Sword Saint should have been the one who had spoken to Ye Fan.

But he had been convinced that Tang Hao would be the better choice because of his casual friendship with Ye Fan.

But it appeared that nothing was going to change Ye Fan’s mind. He was adamant that Lv Hua had to die.

“We’re stuck in a tough spot right now,” Sword Saint said worriedly.

He had intended to do all that he could to save Lv Hua’s life.

That would appease the Lv family’s allies and prevent another uproar in the Chinese martial arts circle.

But Ye Fan's mind was fixed. Sword Saint was caught in a predicament.

"Let's go. We should head to the martial arts court now. God of War is going to lose his patience if he has to wait for us any longer," sighed Tang Hao.

Today was the day of Lv Hua's trial.

Because of the seriousness of the matter and the consequences that it might lead to, the God of War, Sword Saint and the others had taken it upon themselves to conduct the trial.

The trial was going to start soon.

"Alright, let's go." Sword Saint nodded.

It was then that Lv Zi-Ming charged through the entrance and fell hard on his knees before the two.

"Sword Saint, please, I beg you! Please speak to God of War and request that he show mercy to my son! The Lv family has already been decimated. Hua is my only blood kin left in the world. He's our family clan's last hope! If you have to kill someone, kill me instead. I will die in his stead. Please! On account of what my father did for the Chinese martial arts circle, on account of what the Lv family did in watching over the Jiangbei martial arts circle, please spare Hua's life! He knows that he's made a mistake. He's still young! Please give him a chance to repent!" Lv Zi-Ming pleaded desperately. His words were filled with pain and anguish and his face wet with tears.

Sword Saint shook his head. "It's too late. You have only yourselves to blame for your folly. You angered someone

whom you couldn't afford to provoke.”

They weren't going to be able to salvage the situation. Sword Saint didn't wish to spend too much time on Lv Zi-Ming.

He pushed open the doors to the hall and headed to the martial arts court with Tang Hao.

Even though Sword Saint didn't like Ye Fan, he had to admit that the God of War was right. The Lv family had been in the wrong in the first place. So had War God Castle and the Chinese martial arts circle.

They had not done their duty to protect Ye Fan's family and bring the perpetrators to justice. They couldn't blame Ye Fan for taking matters into his own hands and seeking revenge.

The martial arts court began its trial of Lv Hua as soon as Sword Saint and Tang Hao arrived.

The three supreme grandmasters, the God of War, Sword Saint and the Heavenly Grandmaster listened quietly as the proceedings were conducted and the judge questioned Lv Hua.

Lv Hua was terrified witless.

He had three pillars of the nation sitting in on his trial. The stress that came from being the object of their attention wasn't something that Lv Hua could take.

He broke down and fell onto his knees. Tears streamed

Chapter 1482 A Trial

down his cheeks as he pleaded guilty and begged that his life be spared.

“I know I made a mistake. Please spare my life! I don’t want to die. I promise that I’ll never do it again. I’ll be a law-abiding citizen and never make the same mistake again...” Snot and tears pooled around Lv Hua as he wailed desperately.

The God of War and the others remained unmoved. The judge revealed no hint of emotion as he continued to question Lv Hua on his crimes in Jiangdong.

“Speak the truth if you want a lighter sentence. Lie to us or show insubordination, and we’ll make sure you are punished for it. Lv Hua, it will do you good to tell us everything.”

Lv Hua dared not conceal anything from the judge.

He spilled everything about what he had done to Ye Fan’s friends and family in Jiangdong.

At first, the God of War and the others managed to preserve their composure when Lv Hua revealed that he had coveted Ye Fan’s business in Jiangdong.

Then, Lv Hua revealed how he had employed despicable means to torture Ye Fan’s family physically and psychologically so that he could gain full control over Mufan Group. He had engineered a car wreck to get rid of Ye Fan’s mother and wife. That was when the God of War lost his cool.

A loud explosion erupted in the room as the God of War slammed his fist into the table and pulverized it instantly.

“You’re a scoundrel! We must have been blind when we accepted you into War God Castle. Instead of helping Ye Fan’s family, you imprisoned them, robbed them and brought upon them great calamity. Your grandfather Lv Song-Liang is dead now. The Lv family has been decimated and more than a hundred martial artists killed in West Lake. Their deaths are all on your head! You’re the scum of the earth. You deserve to die for your crimes!” The God of War’s voice shook violently with fury and filled the hall like thunder.

Ye Qing-Tian was livid.

War God Castle had been the one who had sent Lv Hua to express their condolences to Ye Fan’s family, and back then, Ye Qing-Tian had punished him for his misdeeds once.

But Lv Hua had not shown any remorse and had only gotten worse.

He had driven Ye Fan to fury and had brought upon a terrible disaster upon the Chinese martial arts circle.

Ye Qing-Tian wished he could kill the scum with a single blow.

“Alright, don’t get worked up. Scum like that don’t deserve to be killed by you. Let the martial arts court deal with him,” Tang Hao said as he tried to calm Ye Qing-Tian down. He turned towards the judge then with a dispassionate look on his face. “We have all the facts of the case now. Lv Hua has pleaded guilty to his crimes. It’s time to decide on his sentence.”

“No! Please stop!”

Voices came rushing into the courtroom then.

Lv Zi-Ming led hundreds of men and women into the courtroom. These were the surviving Jiangbei martial artists and the families of the Jiangbei martial artists who had died. They fell on their knees and kowtowed to the judge.

“We beg War God Castle to spare Lv Hua’s life!”

“Please leave the Jiangbei martial arts circle its last hope...”

“Please spare Lv Hua’s life!”

“Please spare Lv Hua’s life!”

Lv Song-Liang was dead. There were no grandmasters in Jiangbei now.

Lv Hua was a prodigy who had been recognized as a rising star by War God Castle. He had the greatest chances of rising to become a grandmaster.

Saving Lv Hua wasn’t simply something that Lv Zi-Ming wanted but something that the whole Jiangbei martial arts circle desired because it served their personal interests.

Besides, the Jiangbei martial arts circle had always submitted to the rule of the Lv family.

These men and women of Jiangbei wanted to save the Lv family in the latter’s moment of crisis.

Chapter 1482 A Trial



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Hundreds of people were kneeling before the courts.

Their cries of sorrow filled the air and reverberated across the heavens.

The God of War got to his feet, gazed down upon these men and women, and said coolly. "Lv Hua has committed a grievous and unforgiveable crime. There is no place for mercy in the eyes of justice. We cannot spare him even if we wish to. You don't have to do this. Please go home."

With a wave of his hand, Ye Qing-Tian gestured for these people to leave.

But Lv Zi-Ming and the others weren't going to be satisfied with that.

Lv Zi-Ming looked up and stared the God of War in the eye.

"What about Ye Fan? Doesn't he deserve death as well? My son might have been in the wrong, but he killed fewer than ten men in Jiangdong. What about Ye Fan? He killed more than a hundred men at West Lake alone. What about the members of the Lv clan? Ye Fan's killed hundreds of Chinese comrades. If Lv Hua deserves to die for his crime, then Ye Fan cannot be spared from his as well," said Lv Zi-Ming as he bared his teeth furiously.

"That's right. Ye Fan's committed a graver offense when it comes to the Jiangbei martial arts circle. As the leader of the Chinese martial arts circle, you have to exact justice on our behalf. But if you are willing to spare Lv Hua's life, the Jiangbei martial arts circle is also willing to relent and cease our demands for Ye Fan's life. Doing anything else will reveal War God Castle as unjust and

biased. How are you going to command the respect of the rest of the martial arts circle then?”

The Jiangbei martial artists standing behind Lv Zi-Ming began to raise their voices furiously after the latter was done speaking.

“That’s right. How can you kill Lv Hua but not punish Ye Fan? We won’t stand for that! The Jiangbei martial arts circle won’t stand for that!”

Before War God Castle, the men and women of Jiangbei spoke in unison and pleaded for the God of War to release Lv Hua.

“Well...about that...” The judge appeared at a momentary loss as he was assailed by the demands of the crowd.

Sword Saint stepped forward and spoke quietly to Ye Qing-Tian. “Qing-Tian, there is reason to what they are saying. Lv Hua might be the cause of the Jiangbei incident, but we cannot deny the devastation that Ye Fan has caused the Jiangbei martial arts circle. There are many martial artists in Jiangbei demanding that Ye Fan pay for his crime with his life. Sparing Lv Hua’s life will appease these martial artists. They will cease their demands for Ye Fan’s life too. It’s the best solution that will please everyone.”

The compromise was the best solution for both parties.

Ye Qing-Tian nodded. “You make a lot of sense. But will Ye Fan agree to that?”

Sword Saint shook his head. “I got Tang Hao to sound Ye Fan out. He won’t budge. But you’re friends with Ye Fan

and have helped give him a leg up in the martial arts circle. Ye Fan might not listen to other people but he might just listen to you.”

“Are you saying that I should try and persuade him to change his mind again?” Ye Qing-Tian frowned.

“That’s right. That is our only solution. Otherwise, it’s going to be tough for War God Castle to appease the Jiangbei martial arts circle,” said Sword Saint.

Ye Qing-Tian hesitated for a moment before nodding. “Alright, I’ll try.”

Having said that, Ye Qing-Tian called Ye Fan while everyone watched.

“Ye Fan, Sword Saint, the Heavenly Grandmaster and I have conducted the trial for Lv Hua. He has pleaded guilty to all his crimes. He appears remorseful and wishes to repent for his misdeeds. You don’t have to worry though. We know the terrible things that he’s done. He coveted the assets and spouse of our dead warrior. That is absolutely unforgivable. We have discussed and concluded that he should be sentenced to a lifetime imprisonment. He will never step out of jail alive. What do you think of this sentence?”

Ye Qing-Tian was a wise and wily man.

He wanted to save Lv Hua’s life but instead of saying so, he beat around the bush and said that Lv Hua would be sentenced to a lifetime imprisonment.

It would seem that he wasn’t trying to help Lv Hua at all.

Chapter 1483 An Immediate Execution

“Qing-Tian definitely knows how to get the job done!”

Tang Hao appeared impressed and gave the God of War a thumbs up discreetly.

He had tried to seek mercy for Lv Hua too, but it was clear that their different methods had produced different outcomes.

Lv Zi-Ming churned with anxiety when he heard what the God of War had said.

A lifetime imprisonment did mean that his son’s life was spared, but this wasn’t the outcome that he had wanted.

He wanted War God Castle to let Lv Hua off.

“So be it. We must guarantee his safety first. We can deal with the rest after that.”

Lv Zi-Ming was ready to voice his protest but swallowed the words that were on the tip of his tongue.

This wasn’t the time to debate about Lv Hua’s freedom. They had to take it slowly.

If they could save Lv Hua from being executed, his efforts would have paid off.

After a few years, when everyone had forgotten about this matter, he could pull a few strings and have his son released from jail. That would be a piece of cake.

Everyone appeared certain that Lv Hua’s life was going to be spared. It was then that a chilly voice rang out from the other end of the line. “You will execute him

immediately.”

Ye Fan’s words were few, but they conveyed the full extent of his cold murderous fury which came crushing down on everyone like the weight of a mountain.

Everyone was dumbstruck when they heard him.

Tang Hao trembled while Sword Saint widened his eyes.

Ye Qing-Tian stiffened momentarily as well.

Lv Zi-Ming and his people reeled.

They had not expected Ye Fan to show such blatant disregard for the God of War.

Ye Qing-Tian had spoken a great deal and had been rebuffed with a few curt words.

“I...” The God of War froze momentarily, before he began to speak.

But before he could say more, Ye Fan’s voice filled the room again.

“Handing Lv Hua over to the martial arts court for a trial was the greatest extent of my mercy. If you don’t kill him, I’ll head to Mount Yan tomorrow and kill him myself. Lv Hua must die. You can choose how he goes.”

Ye Fan’s voice was filled with unquestionable authority.

He hung up immediately after saying his piece.

The courtroom was filled with a deathly silence.

After a long while, Sword Saint and Tang Hao finally turned towards Ye Qing-Tian. “Qing-Tian, what should we do now?”

The God of War shook his head and sighed.

“What else can we do? We’ll do as he says.”

What?

“You can’t! God of War, you can’t kill Hua! Please, he’s the Lv family’s only surviving hope...” wailed Lv Zi-Ming. But it was to no avail.

The clear hammering of the gavel resounded in the courtroom before the judge announced Lv Hua’s sentence.

“Lv Hua, a resident of Jiangbei, has been found guilty of causing malicious harm to his fellow citizens as well as disorder in Jiangdong. He has committed unforgiveable crimes. I hereby sentence him to capital punishment. He shall be executed immediately!”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

It was as if Lv Hua had just been struck by lightning.

His legs went out under him and he collapsed in a heap on the ground.

His eyes were wide with despair. He couldn't stop wailing and pleading for mercy.

Lv Zi-Ming could not accept what had just happened and passed out on the spot.

The other men and women from Jiangbei began to protest violently after the sentence had been announced.

The martial arts court descended into utter chaos.

Amidst the ruckus, a furious voice thundered and drowned out all other voices.

“Persist in your troublemaking and you'll be expelled from Yanjing!”

The God of War's words boomed loudly and came crushing down on everyone with the weight of a mountain.

Silence descended instantly.

It didn't matter how unhappy they felt, no one dared not speak a single word.

Standing before them was the most powerful martial artist in China. Who would dare to challenge him?

The sound of a gunshot cracked the air.

A scorching bullet rippled through the air and pierced right through Lv Hua's head.

That marked the end of a rising star in the Chinese military, one of the ten young talents who had been conferred a title by War God Castle and the only living descendant of the Lv family as well as his evil deeds.

Lv Hua's heart had been filled with regret during his last living moments.

If he could relive his life again, he would kill himself before provoking Ye Fan.

But you only live once.

Some mistakes, once made, could only be paid with your life!

The disaster in the Chinese martial arts circle that had begun with the Lv family and then exacerbated by Ye Fan's actions finally ended with Lv Hua's death.

War God Castle delivered Lv Hua's corpse to Jiangdong that very night that he had been shot.

Ye Fan stood before Mount Yunding with his hands folded behind his back.

Standing behind him was Li Er, Lei San, Wang Jie-Xi and the Green Dragon Force.

Before them was the cold corpse of Lv Hua resting in his coffin.

"Unrivalled Grandmaster, we're here on the orders of War

God Castle. You are looking at our gesture of recompense. We also have a message from the God of War and Sword Saint," said one of the members of War God Castle who had been tasked to deliver Lv Hua's dead body.

"Speak," Ye Fan said dispassionately.

"The God of War wishes to tell you that the matter has been put to rest. This marks the end of everything. Farewell!" Having said that, these men did not linger and instead drove back to Yanjing immediately.

They took Lv Hua's body with them.

The Lv family had requested that Lv Hua's body be sent back to Jiangbei, where it would be buried in the family clan's mausoleum.

Mount Yunding remained deathly silent after the men from War God Castle had left.

It was a long time before Li Er and Lei San recovered from the waves of emotion swelling inside them.

Li Er was the first to speak. He stared at Ye Fan incredulously, as if he would a ghost. "Mr Chu...is that the end of the matter? Did War God Castle really give in...to your request?"

No one could understand the shock that Li Er was reeling from.

He could not have expected War God Castle to do as Ye Fan had asked. Instead of demanding that Ye Fan pay for what he had done, they had killed Lv Hua to make

Chapter 1484 Everything Ends Here!

amendments to Ye Fan.

Li Er had thought Ye Fan had been bragging all along.

But he had not. Mr Chu was truly that incredible.

“That’s just...amazing. Mr Chu managed to kill so many people that they gave in to his demands. My god...”

The three men were overwhelmed with shock.

They couldn’t believe that War God Castle had delivered Lv Hua’s dead body to Mount Yunding for Ye Fan’s personal inspection.

That had clearly been a gesture meant to placate Ye Fan and appease his anger.

Ye Fan must be the only man in China who had the power to make the most powerful martial arts organization in the country display such humility.

It took the men a long time to recover from their disbelief.

They remained confused though.

“Mr Chu, there’s something that continues to puzzle me though. How did you know that War God Castle wouldn’t come after you?”

“That’s simple. They don’t have the power to do anything to me,” Ye Fan said with a soft laugh before turning away and walking off.

He left Li Er and the others standing stiffly in the wind.

“That...that’s just...”

Their eyelids twitched violently. Then, they exchanged a look with one another and smiled exasperatedly.

“Mr Chu’s incredible. No one can compare to him.”

What Ye Fan had meant was that Sword Saint, the King of Fighters and the other supreme grandmasters weren’t his match even if they tried to take him down together.

He might have been bragging, but nevertheless, the confidence and certainty in his tone had won the respect of Li Er and the others.

“Alright, let’s make a move. The matter is settled. We should get back.”

Wang Jie-Xi and the others got ready to go home.

They had had no idea what the government was going to do with Ye Fan before those men from War God Castle had arrived at Mount Yunding.

They had not expected that their worry had all been for nothing.

Yanjing had had no intention of punishing Ye Fan and had in fact delivered Lv Hua’s body to Ye Fan as a show of their apology.

As they prepared to leave Mount Yunding, they caught Ye Fan driving a black Maybach out of the garage.

“Mr Chu, do you still have matters to attend to? You’re the pillar of our nation and the lord of Jiangdong. There’s

no need for you to attend to trivial matters personally. Just tell me what you want done and I'll get it done for you." Li Er hurried towards Ye Fan with a simpering smile on his face.

"That shameless old thing's trying to ingratiate himself with Mr Chu again."

The eyelids of Wang Jie-Xi and Lei San began to twitch violently as they observed Li Er shamelessly trying to get into Ye Fan's good books.

They wouldn't be able to butter up Ye Fan like he could.

Li Er was the only person of the three who didn't feel embarrassed talking like that.

He reached for the door as he spoke, with the intention of taking Ye Fan's place in the car.

"Get lost! I'm going to take care of my wife. Are you going to help me with that too? Why don't you have kids with her as well? Get out of my way and stay away. You'll pay if I'm late to picking up my wife because of you!" Ye Fan's face darkened with annoyance as he yelled at Li Er and chased him away.

Taking care of his wife was his job. He wasn't going to let any Tom, Dick or Harry do it.

Ye Fan had let Li Er off lightly with a verbal thrashing. Any other man would have beaten Li Er up.

Ye Fan drove off, leaving Li Er in a smog of exhaust fumes and a dazed look on his face.

Chapter 1484 Everything Ends Here!

Wang Jie-Xi and Lei San doubled over in laughter as they stared at the dejected look on Li Er's face.

“Li Er, you old geezer, you've gone too far with your ass licking! Mr Chu's right. Why don't you have kids with his wife while you're at it? Oh dear, this is killing me!”

“Get out of here right now! I don't want to see your stupid faces in Yunzhou!” An embarrassed Li Er cursed out loud in fury.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Night had fallen.

Ye Fan was driving leisurely down the streets of Yunzhou.

The window to his car was rolled down even in spite of the chill in the air.

The freezing winds rushed into the car through the open window, stirring at the strands of hair hanging before Ye Fan's forehead.

An ordinary person would have found the cold unbearable.

But this was just a slight chill to Ye Fan.

Melodic music filled the inside of the car.

A soft purple light enveloped the car's interior, creating a dreamlike atmosphere.

The scenery fled by outside.

Next to his ear, the night breeze whispered softly.

Ye Fan enjoyed the soothing and relaxing quiet.

He felt as if he were in a world of his own.

There was no hate, no violence, no death. There was no duty or cause.

Perhaps this was an ease that he could only experience in such moments of solitude.

He felt like a newborn baby that was unbound by longing or obligation.

Sometimes, Ye Fan wanted to set aside his duties and his mission and simply live a simple and ordinary life that was filled with simple and constant joys.

Then, he would consider his desire carefully and realize that it was a luxury that he couldn't afford.

He knew that there were some things that he couldn't and shouldn't let go of.

The trees might desire peace, but they could not stop the winds from blowing and disturbing the quiet.

The war between Ye Fan and the Chu family had been destined to happen the moment that he had been born.

He had thought of giving it all up, of course.

He had thought of living a peaceful and ordinary life like Shin Yu-Xiang and billions of other ordinary folks out there.

But the Chu family would never let him off that easily.

It was the Chu family who had shattered Ye Fan's dreams of a simple, peaceful life.

It was the Chu family who had forced Ye Fan down this path.

Ten years had passed.

The tiny spark that had kindled was now a massive

wildfire.

It was time to settle their score.

This was fate.

Their fates had been determined from the very beginning.

Ye Fan could not escape his destiny and he had no wish to.

The tires of Ye Fan's car screeched violently as he sped down the street. His headlights were like flames that burned the darkness and turned it into ashes.

It didn't take long for Ye Fan to reach Mufan Group.

Qiu Mu-Cheng should be getting off work soon.

The matter with the Lv family had been dealt with. Ye Fan had begun the final leg of his preparations to storm the Chu family.

He wasn't going to remain in Jiangdong for long.

He wanted to spend as much time with Qiu Mu-Cheng as he could during his last days in the city.

This might be the last happy memories that he was going to leave his wife with.

Qiu Mu-Cheng had just been done ironing out the details of a project with one of the company's partners. They

Chapter 1485 Your Husband Is Here

laughed and chatted merrily as they headed downstairs.

“Miss Qiu, you didn’t drive today, did you? Why don’t I give you a lift?” offered one of the men in the group after seeing her stand by the roadside, waiting for her ride. He appeared to be in his thirties.

Qiu Mu-Cheng shook her head. “Thanks for the offer, Mr Wang. Don’t worry about it. I’m waiting for my ride. It’ll be arriving in a minute.”

She didn’t explain that her husband was going to pick her up.

After all, she would be stuck in an embarrassing predicament if Ye Fan didn’t turn up.

“You don’t have to be a stranger, Miss Qiu. We’re going to be business partners. That makes us friends. Feel free to ask me for help anytime. Come on, hop in. I’ll send you home. It’s not safe for pretty ladies like you to go home alone,” urged Wang Ming with a strange look in his eyes.

He admired the young woman before him very much.

Even though they had only spent a few hours together negotiating the details of their partnership, Wang Ming and his colleagues had been won over by Qiu Mu-Cheng’s charm.

He had not expected to bump into such a wonderful young woman during his first business partnership in Jiangdong.

He had been prepared to remain unmarried for the rest of his life. Then, he had seen Qiu Mu-Cheng and he had

wavered.

In fact, he had every intention to court Qiu Mu-Cheng.

This was the best chance for them to get to know each other better.

“Er, Mr Wang...” An old man wiggled his eyebrows at Wang Ming and tugged at his arm lightly then.

He seemed to be Wang Ming’s personal assistant.

Wang Ming remained oblivious though. He had eyes only for the woman before him.

“Miss Qiu, you’re not going to put me in a spot, are you? We were pretty disappointed when you turned down the invitation to our dinner. If you were to turn down a ride now, I can only take your refusal as a sign of your distrust towards Wang Enterprise. There’s no way we can proceed with our project,” joked Wang Ming.

In the face of Wang Ming’s persistence, Qiu Mu-Cheng couldn’t possibly turn down his offer to send her home.

Besides, the man that she had been waiting for was nowhere to be seen and that undoubtedly left Qiu Mu-Cheng simmering with rage.

“That jerk! He promised that he would pick me up. He must be caught up in his training and forgot all about his wife again. He’s going to drive me to an early grave!”

Underneath the veneer of Qiu Mu-Cheng’s composure burned incredible rage.

She threw a look into the distance, then bit her lips and got into Wang Ming's car almost spitefully.

She was a married woman who was getting a ride home from a man. Her husband would be so mad if he found out.

But that was exactly what Qiu Mu-Cheng wanted Ye Fan to be. She wanted him to be mad. He was the one who had gone against his word, after all.

But Qiu Mu-Cheng wasn't a reckless or impulsive woman.

She had gotten into Wang Ming's car after checking that there were other passengers in the car.

She might want to annoy Ye Fan, but she was still a principled woman. She would never get into a car with a man if they were alone.

"Sorry for the trouble, Mr Wang."

"Not at all! It's my honor to give Miss Qiu a ride home." Wang Ming was elated.

This might not mean much, but at least, it was a good start, wasn't it?

He was ready to pull his door shut and begin the enjoyable ride when he heard a loud honk.

Two beams of bright light pierced the light like lightsabers.

Wang Ming and the others stared in shock as a black

shadow sped past them. The sound of screeching tires leaving tracks on the road rang in the air. When it stopped, there was a black car blocking the road in front of Wang Ming's own.

"What's going on? What an uncivilized driver!"

Wang Ming frowned and smacked the car horn repeatedly. But it appeared that the other car wasn't going to move away anytime soon.

Wang Ming finally got out of his car, walked up to the other car and stared at the driver through the window. "Young man, please move your car. You came to the wrong place if you're planning to pick up cute girls. Find a school or something."

Wang Ming was clearly displeased. This was his first time giving a young woman whom he was interested in a ride home. He didn't expect his plans to be ruined by a young hooligan blocking the road with his car. He was putting Wang Ming in a terribly awkward spot.

The young man in the car did not seem to care that Wang Ming was displeased.

Instead, he stuck his head out of the window. His lips were curled into an indulgent smile and his voice filled with exasperation as he shouted at Qiu Mu-Cheng. "Your husband's here! Why are you still sitting there? Silly girl, how could you just get into anyone's car like that? Aren't you afraid of falling victim to human trafficking?"

Chapter 1485 Your Husband Is Here



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

The soft peals of laughter, intermingled with a tinge of exasperation, filled the night.

Qiu Mu-Cheng froze momentarily when she heard that voice. The gloom that had darkened her heart vanished instantly and was replaced by a heart full of joy.

Her husband was here.

Qiu Mu-Cheng did not get out of the car immediately though. She turned her head away sulkily and ignored Ye Fan. She seemed to be punishing the young man for his lateness.

“Husband? Your wife’s not here. This must be a mistake.” Wang Ming frowned at Ye Fan’s words.

He told Ye Fan to move his car out of the way before he called the cops.

But Ye Fan ignored Wang Ming’s warning completely as he pulled his door open, got out of his car and approached Wang Ming’s car.

“What do you think you’re doing? Are you thinking of hitting me? Somebody, come, quick!” A terrified Wang Ming began to yell for help. He had wilted slightly when he had seen Ye Fan step out of his car with an unhappy look on his face. He was sure that the young man was going to beat him up.

Ye Fan simply pulled him aside.

Then, he continued walking until he reached Wang Ming’s car. He pulled the door to the backseat open.

Qiu Mu-Cheng stared in shock and disbelief as the young man carried her out of Wang Ming's car.

Wang Ming's eyes turned red with fury at the sight.

"You scoundrel, what do you think you're doing? How dare you assault Miss Qiu in public! I'm warning you, let go of her right now! Otherwise, you're going to get it from me!" Wang Ming yapped furiously at Ye Fan like a dog gone mad.

In the midst of his fury, he appeared ready to hit Ye Fan.

He hadn't even had the chance to hold the hand of the woman whom he was interested in and here was this young ruffian, lifting her into his arms. This must be what one felt like when their wives were stolen from them and their fathers killed right before their eyes.

Rage burned inside Wang Ming.

"Let me down, you ruffian! Scoundrel, let me down! Everyone's watching!" Qiu Mu-Cheng flushed in Ye Fan's eyes and wouldn't stop struggling.

They were right outside the office.

It was the end of the day. The employees of Mufan Group were streaming out of the building.

Everyone was watching them.

She was the CEO of Mufan Group and here she was, being held in someone's arms like some hapless woman. The reputation that she had carefully crafted of herself as a distant and intimidating CEO would be destroyed if

her employees were to see her like that.

How was she to face everyone in the company after that?

But Ye Fan didn't care at all.

The more the woman in his arms struggled, the tighter his grip grew.

Ye Fan seemed intent on provoking Wang Ming. He threw a smile at the latter while keeping his arms around Qiu Mu-Cheng. "You have anything to say about my carrying her?"

"Of course! Let her down right this instant or I'll kill you!" Wang Ming was fuming. He had never seen a man so brazen.

He had not only acted like an absolute cad in public but had crowed about it.

"Is that all it takes to get you mad? What if I tell you that I'm not stopping at hugging her and that I'm going to kiss her as well? Won't that drive you crazy?" Ye Fan's smile turned sly.

"You wouldn't dare, you scoundrel!" Wang Ming's eyes burned with rage.

He heard the loud smack then. Ye Fan had kissed Qiu Mu-Cheng firmly on the lips.

Qiu Mu-Cheng's cheeks flushed bright red. She looked like a rose in full blossom.

Chapter 1486 Just Give Up

Mortified, she hit Ye Fan hard in the chest, then buried her face where she had hit him. She was too embarrassed to look at anyone.

Wang Ming's eyes nearly popped out of their sockets.

"You bastard, I'm going to kill you!"

Wang Ming had lost it. His composure was in tatters as he grabbed a brick on the road and got ready to smash it into Ye Fan's head.

"Come down, Young Master," said the old man who had gotten out of the car hastily and had his arms wrapped around Wang Ming. He seemed on the verge of tears as he pleaded with the young man. His voice was filled with horror. "Young Master, what are you doing? They're just a young married couple getting cozy with each other. Why are you getting upset over that?"

"What the hell are you talking about? He's just a hooligan! He's not worthy of Miss Qiu at all! Married? He doesn't deserve to be her husband. Let me go right now!" Wang Ming wouldn't stop hollering.

Qiu Mu-Cheng had freed herself from Ye Fan's arms by then.

The blush on her cheeks had not faded completely. Her furious glare at Ye Fan seemed to hint at the threat of punishment that awaited Ye Fan once they got home.

Ye Fan shrugged and grinned fearlessly.

"Miss Qiu, are you alright? I'm so sorry for the scare. You wait right here while I teach that ruffian a lesson!"

Wang Ming's anger appeared unappeased even though Qiu Mu-Cheng had regained her freedom. He still wanted to teach Ye Fan a lesson.

He did not expect the absence of gratitude from Qiu Mu-Cheng. In fact, she stood in his way and said coldly. "Mr Wang, I request that you not insult my husband in this manner again."

What?

Her...husband?

Wang Ming was frozen to the spot. He felt as if he had just been struck by lightning.

"He's...really your husband? You're...married?" blurted Wang Ming. He stared at Qiu Mu-Cheng, then stared at Ye Fan, who was standing lazily in the distance.

Wang Ming could feel his heart shatter.

Qiu Mu-Cheng wasn't done talking.

"I'd still like to thank you for the offer to send me home though. Since my husband's here, I won't trouble you for the ride. I'll head off now. You should head home too."

She walked up to Ye Fan. "Why are you still standing there? Hurry up and drive me home. You're going to destroy my reputation one of these days!"

Her angry words belied the sweet happiness swelling inside her.

That was women for you, saying one thing and meaning

the other. It was a gift that every woman was born with.

The married couple drove off and left Wang Ming and the others standing stupidly in the night.

“Is Miss Qiu really married? To that guy? He doesn’t deserve her!”

No one could understand how disappointed and furious Wang Ming felt then.

He was convinced that Qiu Mu-Cheng was too good for her husband.

Then he burst out into laughter.

“That’s alright. Their marriage won’t last. He doesn’t deserve her, after all. Both parties have to be equally matched in order for a marriage to last. I’ll use my charms on her and win her over easily.” Wang Ming smiled. His voice was filled with confidence.

The old man next to him shook his head and sighed. “Forget about it, Young Master. You should just give up. You’re new to Jiangdong. There are many things that you ought to know but I’ve not had the chance to share with you yet.”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

“Why? Why should I give up? Do you think that young punk’s a better man than I am?” Wang Ming said angrily.

Wang Enterprise’s wealth and influence might not compare with that of Mufan Group, but it was still a powerful company that domineered the market.

As the general manager of the company, Wang Ming was naturally proud of his accomplishments.

He might grudgingly accept the fact that he was not Qiu Mu-Cheng’s equal, but he couldn’t accept one of his most loyal staff implying that he was no better than a hooligan. He was naturally furious.

In his eyes, Ye Fan was no better than a hooligan and a good-for-nothing.

A person with excellent upbringing would not have behaved like a flippant and superficial cad.

Wang Ming expected the old man before him to apologize immediately after what he had said.

He did not expect the latter to shake his head and sigh. “Young Master, truth be told, that young man is a better man than you are.”

“You!” Wang Ming was ready to blow up.

“Please don’t get worked up. I’m not trying to put you down. You’re not the only one who cannot compare with him. No one in Jiangdong can.”

Wang Ming froze. “Are you telling me that he’s...”

The old man nodded before Wang Ming could utter Ye Fan's name.

"That's right. He's Mr Chu, the man who rules Jiangdong. Qiu Mu-Cheng, the CEO of Mufan Group is his wife. Do you really think you stand a chance of stealing Mr Chu's wife from him?" said the old man slowly, his wry smile revealing his exasperation.

Wang Enterprise had only ventured into Jiangdong recently. In the past, the old man had been the one who had represented Wang Enterprise during business meetings with Mufan Group. Wang Ming had only arrived at Jiangdong the day before.

He was unaware of many things going on in the province.

The old man before him clearly knew more than he did.

Otherwise, the old man wouldn't have tried to stop Wang Ming when the latter had tried to express his interest in Qiu Mu-Cheng. He had been worried that Wang Ming might get himself in trouble.

Fortunately, Mr Chu was a forgiving man who had not put Wang Ming in a tough spot.

Should Mr Chu insist on pursuing the matter, Wang Enterprise would be forced to give in and make a public apology.

This wasn't their turf, after all.

Besides, Wang Enterprise was no match for Mr Chu, who had vast resources and an array of means at his

disposal.

“Is he really Mr Chu? But he’s really young!”

Wang Ming was frozen to the spot as he stared into the distance with wide eyes. He appeared to be scared witless.

Even though he was not from Jiangdong, but he had long heard of Mr Chu’s reputation.

The man was well known in both the Chinese corporate world and martial arts circle. Everyone who was important in Jiangdong treated him as their lord.

Companies outside Jiangdong that wished to enter the Jiangdong market had to seek permission from both the Jiangdong government as well as from Mr Chu.

Otherwise, they would find it impossible to run their business in Jiangdong after entering the market.

Wang Ming knew how powerful and well-respected Mr Chu was. That was why he was so terrified after finding out that he had just offended Ye Fan. His back was drenched in cold sweat.

“Mufan Group? Qiu Mu-Cheng? The lord of Jiangdong? I should have guessed it soon. Mr Chu is probably the only man who can successfully win the heart of an independent, strong woman like Qiu Mu-Cheng.” Wang Ming burst out into laughter after his momentary stupor. His laugh was filled with powerlessness and belied the waves of emotional turmoil surging inside him. “Come on, let’s head back.”

Chapter 1487 Pour That Away

Now that he knew that Qiu Mu-Cheng was Ye Fan's wife, Wang Ming abandoned all thought of courting her.

Worried that Ye Fan might come after him, he drove out of the city that night and left Jiangdong.

His assistant would be in charge of their company's project with Mufan Group.

Wang Ming wouldn't know that Ye Fan didn't care for insignificant nobodies like him. The man wasn't going to come after him at all.

In fact, Ye Fan had forgotten all about the incident with Wang Ming by the time he and Qiu Mu-Cheng had reached home.

Qiu Mu-Cheng wasn't going to let Ye Fan off that easily though. She had given the man a verbal thrashing as soon as they had gotten home.

But Ye Fan appeared unfazed and simply grinned as his wife voiced her protests.

He seemed completely unafraid.

"Why are you smiling? There were so many people watching us then. How could you tease me like that? How am I supposed to face my colleagues in the office now? Couldn't you have kissed me after we've gotten home? It's not as if I don't let you kiss me...you're going to drive me up the wall! Your wife's reputation is completely ruined now..." Qiu Mu-Cheng fumed and stomped her foot furiously. The more she thought about it, the angrier she got.

In order to placate his wife, Ye Fan brought a small tub of water to Qiu Mu-Cheng so that he could soak her feet in warm water.

“My dear, let’s get your feet in the warm water first. You can yell at me after we’re done soaking your feet.”

Before Qiu Mu-Cheng could say anything, Ye Fan had slipped her heels off, revealing a pair of snowy white feet. He began to wash his wife’s feet meticulously.

“It’s hard to believe that the almighty Unrivalled Grandmaster who strikes fear in the hearts of all in Jiangdong and China, whom War God Castle had to give in to and offer an apology, is just a lowly servant in his own home. The saying is true. Everyone has a weakness. Miss Qiu is the only person who can push Mr Chu around.”

Outside the room, five persons were tiptoeing on their feet as they peeped through the window and witnessed Ye Fan’s meek humility.

They were none other than the Green Dragon Force, who had been tasked to guard the mansion.

Li Zi-Yang shook his head and sighed as he watched the hilarious scene unfolding in the room.

Tai Shan couldn’t stop himself from laughing. “Everyone has a weakness, you say? He’s just afraid of his wife!”

Despite their hushed tones and the window separating them and Ye Fan, Ye Fan’s keen hearing had caught what they had said.

Chapter 1487 Pour That Away

“These punks, how dare they laugh at me!” Ye Fan glared and raised his voice. “Tai Shan, you have nothing better to do with your time, haven’t you? Get in here and deal with this basin of water!”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

It was a clear and sunny day in Yunzhou, Jiangdong today. The sky was blue and free of clouds.

Yunwu Lake, which was usually obscured by cloud and mist, was clearly visible from afar.

The surface of the vast lake rippled and glittered with sunlight.

The rare view drew numerous residents of the city to the lake for some sightseeing.

As countless tourists lost themselves to the beauty of the lake, a child amongst them pointed at the distant Mount Yunding in confusion. "Look, mum! Look at all that cotton candy!"

His words drew many eyes towards the mountain.

"Heavens!"

"Oh my god!"

"What's with all those clouds?"

"It looks like a sea of clouds!"

"What's that place?"

"Where did all those clouds come from?"

Countless voices filled the air as everyone stared into the distance.

Clouds that gathered and formed a light mist were a common sight above Yunwu Lake but what they were

seeing now was an actual sea of clouds.

Thousands of thick white clouds hung heavily above the lake, obscuring the towering mountain behind them and leaving the people only with the view of the foot of those mountains.

The towering mountain looked like it had descended from the heavens.

The sudden appearance of the strange sight sent countless people into a dazed stupor.

In fact, they had mistakenly thought that the mountain before them had appeared out of nowhere.

“Isn’t that...Mount Yunding? That’s where Mr Chu lives. What happened? How did so many clouds gather over the course of a night? Has Mr Chu ascended and attained godhood?” gasped someone in surprise after he finally recognized the mountain for what it truly was.

Others suspected that Ye Fan had attained godhood.

News of the strange phenomena on Mount Yunding soon spread everywhere and caused an uproar in Yunzhou.

Within half a day, countless residents had gathered at the foot of Mount Yunding to catch a glimpse of the strange sight. The roads in the vicinity were jammed pack with cars.

Without Li Er’s men stationed at the foot of the mountain to guard the mansion, these curious folks would have rushed up the mountain to find out what was going on.

“Step aside and make way for Master Er.”

“Who dares block the way of Master Er?”

The loud voices of the brothers Jin Bao and Yin Bao rose above the massive crowd suddenly.

A man who was wearing a suit and had a bald patch at the top of his head was escorted by his guards as he charged up Mount Yunding.

“Mr Chu, what happened? Is this divine punishment? Please say something. You’re scaring me!”

Li Er had been scared witless when he had heard about the strange sight at Mount Yunding.

He had been convinced that the heavens had decided that Ye Fan had killed one too many and was going to exact divine punishment. Ye Fan was going to be struck down by lightning.

He had hurried to Mount Yunding immediately.

He had panicked when he saw neither hair nor hide of Ye Fan after searching the entire mansion.

“Master Er...look, isn’t that Mr Chu?” Jin Bao seemed to have come across something. His voice shook with incredulity and awe as he pointed ahead of them.

Li Er looked up.

Standing proudly between the heaven and earth and amidst the clouds was a young man.

Chapter 1488 The Formation Is Done

The sun hovered behind him while light enveloped his person.

If Li Er were to look closer, he would catch the piece of jade floating in midair before Ye Fan.

It was shaped like the full moon and stood eight feet tall.

This was the Yasakani Jade, one of the three sacred artefacts that he had gotten from Japan.

Between the moon-shaped jade and the sun stood Ye Fan, exuding an aura of absolute and godlike power.

“May the energies of the sun and moon gather and transform into the Invoke the Celestial Sky Formation!”

A voice that sounded otherworldly filled the heavens.

The lands and rivers quaked while the sea of clouds roiled.

Beams of light surged from the ground under the feet of Li Er, Jin Bao and Yin Bao, and rushed towards the skies.

Countless beams intersected in the sky, weaving a web of light that spanned thousands of meters and fell across Mount Yunding.

“That’s...that’s...”

Li Er and the others were stupefied by the sight. Their eyes were filled with incredulity.

“Heavens! Who is Mr Chu exactly? Is he still human?” Li Er thought to himself.

Unable to withstand the shock assailing them, Li Er and the others fell to their knees with a loud thud.

They resembled devout disciples kowtowing to their mighty god.

After a long while, the beams of light in the sky finally faded. Peace and quiet descended upon the mountain again.

The aura of intimidating power around Ye Fan faded away as he slowly approached Li Er, Jin Bao and Yin Bao.

With his ruffled hair, his sneakers and sweatpants, he looked like an ordinary young man who had just graduated from college.

No one would look at him and associate him with Mr Chu, the man who ruled Jiangdong and struck fear in the hearts of Chinese martial artists.

“You don’t have to be so nervous. I was setting up a defensive formation. In times of crisis and when faced with an unbeatable foe, you may seek shelter at Mount Yunding. I’ll teach you how to control the formation. With the protection of the Invoke the Celestial Sky Formation, few in China would be able to breach these grounds. Li Er, from this day, you will be responsible for this formation and for the safety of my friends and family.” Ye Fan’s face had no hint of emotion as he spoke slowly and calmly. He stood tall and with his hands folded behind his back.

At his feet was Li Er, still on his knees.

The man froze when he heard what Ye Fan had said. The

young man seemed to be making his will.

“Mr Chu, why are you telling me this? Are you planning to leave again?”

Li Er could sense what Ye Fan was trying to say. It seemed as if Ye Fan was going to leave for good this time.

Ye Fan did not reply at first.

He simply turned away and stared past the layers of clouds and into the distant sky. His voice was heavy and low when he spoke. “I came to Yunzhou so that I could leave it one day. How can I continue to stay when my mission is waiting for me? It’s been ten years. It’s time to do what I set out to do.”

Li Er slammed his forehead into the ground with a loud thud. The deafening sound frightened Jin Bao and Yin Bao, who had been standing in the corner all this while.

“Mr Chu, you can’t leave! Jiangdong can’t do without you. Yunzhou can’t do without you. In fact, I can’t do without you...no one else can keep the peace in Jiangdong!” wailed Li Er as tears streamed down his cheeks.

Perhaps Li Er truly couldn’t bear to part with Ye Fan.

After all, he had gone through so much hardship with the young man.

They had survived the battle at Mount Tai, the Feast of the Sea and Sky and the chaos that the Lu and Xur families had wrought on Jiangdong.

Chapter 1488 The Formation Is Done

He had watched Ye Fan grow from a young man who was a nobody to someone whose name was heard in every household in Jiangdong, and finally to someone whose name struck awe and fear in the hearts of many across the whole of China.

With Ye Fan around, Li Er feared nothing.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

But now, Ye Fan was saying that he was leaving.

Ye Fan had left them for long periods of time before in the past, but Li Er could sense that it was going to be different this time.

This was the first time that he had glimpsed uncertainty in the young man's eyes.

The sight seemed incredulous.

Li Er knew very well how proud Ye Fan was.

He had shown no hints of uncertainty even when he had charged into Jiangbei or stormed Mount Yan alone. He had faced down numerous Chinese supreme grandmasters without the slightest hesitation.

But the arrogance and confidence that he once had seemed to have fled him this time.

Li Er could tell that this time, Ye Fan might not be coming back.

He found that unacceptable.

He was like the grass growing at the foot of the mountain, who had woken up in the morning to find out that the mountain that he had relied on for shade and shelter was gone.

No one would shelter him from the storm now!

“Mr Chu, I can't do this. I really can't! I know nothing else but flattery and buttering someone up! You're the reason why I am where I am today. Without you, I'll just be a lazy

good-for-nothing...I know what I'm capable of. I won't be able to run Jiangdong without you...Mr Chu, please don't leave...Miss Qiu can't do without you too!" wailed Li Er.

Snot and tears stained his face. He looked like a young woman who had been spurned by her caddish lover.

Ye Fan simply smiled.

"Stop crying like a girl. Don't worry, besides setting up that formation, I will also be leaving the Green Dragon Force in Jiangdong. With their support, you'll be able to help me keep Jiangdong safe. Don't underestimate what the Invoke the Celestial Sky Formation is capable of. Even those old fellows from War God Castle will take a while to breach the formation when it's fully activated. Alright, I've said my piece. Remember what I told you. I'll be heading to Fenghai tomorrow. Don't tell Mu-Cheng what I told you. You can go now."

Ye Fan seemed exhausted. With a wave of his hand, he sent Li Er away.

Li Er's eyes were red. He gave Ye Fan a final glance before he left. "Mr Chu, will I see you again?"

Ye Fan laughed.

"What are you going on about? I'm not going on a suicide mission. Stop dawdling and get out of here. Remember, guard Jiangdong on my behalf," Ye Fan said before chasing Li Er off.

He was left alone on Mount Yunding.

The smile on Ye Fan's lips faded away now that Li Er was

gone and the faint mirth on his face was replaced with intense solemnity.

Li Er had been right. Ye Fan wasn't confident of his chances.

Even though he had been planning for this for the past ten years, he remained uncertain if he would succeed.

After all, he was going to take on a longstanding family and sect that had dominated great parts of the world for centuries.

Since Ye Fan could remember, he had been taught the Chu family's strength and power and Chu Sect's invincibility.

Both the Chu family and Chu Sect were the epitome of absolute power in the world.

In fact, Ye Fan had no idea the extent of resources and power that the Chu family had kept hidden from the public eye. All he knew was the little that they had revealed.

Besides the Chu family, he also had Chu Sect to contend with.

The silhouette of a proud and devastatingly beautiful woman popped up in Ye Fan's head then.

His heart skipped a beat without any warning.

Something seemed to be tearing apart. From its ripped seams emerged bitterness and sorrow.

Chapter 1489 Have You Really Made up Your Mind?

No matter how resilient he had grown, there were still things out there that could pierce the hardened husk around his heart.

She was the first woman who had tricked him.

He couldn't have known that Yu Yun, the woman whom he had spent so much time with at the old Chu family mansion and whom he had embarked on joint cultivation with, was the sect leader of Chu Sect.

He hadn't expected her to be so heartless.

She had cast aside their friendship and chosen to protect Chu Sect's interests.

The sword that had pierced his heart that night had also destroyed the warm memories that he had held of that woman.

She probably wasn't going to stand by and do nothing if the Chu family came under attack.

They might have to fight each other.

She was an incredibly powerful foe.

But, so what?

It didn't matter if the path before him was laid with obstacles or that he might not survive the trip, Ye Fan was going to take this trip through the gates of hell.

Like the moth flinging itself at a fire, he would not regret his death.

This was Ye Fan's obsession. It was what he had toiled and labored so hard for to attain. It was what had given him the reason to live.

The wintry winds began to howl.

Ye Fan was a solitary figure standing at the top of the mountain.

The hems of his clothes fluttered loudly in the harsh winds.

He stood silently under the vast heavens.

No one knew what he was thinking.

After a very long while, the call that Ye Fan had been waiting for finally arrived.

It was from Han.

Han's communications with Ye Fan had dwindled since the Chu family had changed its head of the family.

The lords and dukes of each reign did not live past the king of said reign.

Han's status in the Chu family had plummeted and he could no longer move as freely in the Chu family.

He had to exercise extreme care when communicating with Ye Fan.

Chu Zheng-Liang and his son weren't going to let him off easily should his identity as Ye Fan's spy be exposed.

“Young Master, are you well? Gaia told me what happened to you.” Han’s voice was deep and gravelly over the phone.

“I’m fine. What’s the situation like in the Chu family? If everything goes according to plan, I’ll be heading to the Chu family in a few days. I’ve sent out the Dragon God Tokens. I’ll be leading the Dragons and storming Chu Sect in a few days,” said Ye Fan.

Han fell silent for a moment.

“Master, have you truly made up your mind? Chu Zheng-Liang and his son have the Chu family under their control now. Should you fail, there will be no turning back for you. Your killing of multiple elders of Chu Sect in the Amazon rainforest has incurred the collective wrath of the upper echelons of all three families in Chu Sect. If they find out that you’re alive and are storming the sect, they won’t stand by and do nothing. The Sect Leader might step in.”

Han was filled with worry.

Chu Zheng-Hong had been the head of the Chu family in the past.

Han knew that even if Ye Fan were to fail in his attempt to storm the Chu family, the worst that he might suffer was defeat and injury.

Ye Fan was still Chu Zheng-Hong’s flesh and blood. No matter the gravity of his misdeed, Chu Zheng-Hong would try his best to ensure that Ye Fan got out alive.

But everything was different now.

Chapter 1489 Have You Really Made up Your Mind?

The odds were clearly and utterly against Ye Fan.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Ye Fan would be surrounded by enemies at the Chu family.

He would not survive if he were to fail.

Han did not wish to see Ye Fan die if he should not succeed.

Yet, Ye Fan seemed unmoved by Han's advice.

But Han had said something that had stirred a ripple of emotion in Ye Fan's eyes.

"Chu Zheng-Liang and his son are the heads of the family now? How about him? Wasn't he the head of the Chu family?"

Despite the time that had passed, Ye Fan still avoided speaking the man's name.

That name had once been his greatest shield and the man himself a giant in his eyes.

The trust and reliance that Ye Fan previously had in the man had transformed into an equal measure of hostility.

He didn't even want to speak his name.

Han sighed. "They had a new head of the family appointed quite some time ago. Chu Zheng-Liang and his son are running the Chu family clan now. The old master went missing after he left for Japan. Young Master, if you could just make a trip to Japan..."

"Alright, you can stop right there. I'm not interested," Ye Fan cut Han off before he could go on. "It's a pity though."

I was looking forward to seeing the look on his face when he sees the son that he cast aside years ago storm the Chu family. It seems that he's going to miss that."

The tone of his voice was calm. There was a smile on his face, as if he was talking about a complete stranger.

But no matter how hard Ye Fan tried to hide it, Han could hear the emotional turmoil bubbling beneath the veneer of his composure.

"They're truly father and son. They share the same character," thought Han privately to himself.

He was both saddened and comforted by the thought.

He couldn't help but be gladdened that Chu Zheng-Hong had left the Chu family. He was glad that the elders of the Chu family had stripped Chu Zheng-Hong of his position as the head of the family.

The father and son would not have to fight each other now. A tragedy had been averted.

"Young Master, will you not reconsider your decision? Perhaps we could wait a few more years. We could storm the Chu family when we are stronger. Our chances of success would be higher." Han made another attempt to persuade Ye Fan.

But Ye Fan's mind was made.

"You want me to wait? I've waited for ten years. Haven't I waited long enough? I'm at the end of my patience. Besides, I've prepared everything. There's no point in waiting further."

"I'm just worried..." Han said anxiously.

"You don't have to worry about anything. The worst that could happen is my death. I knew that I could die when I vowed to return to the Chu family. You don't have to say anything. I've thought about everything that could happen. I know the path that I've chosen. I also know the obstacles that are standing in my way. But, so what? Storming the Chu family has been my only purpose in life. It's the reason I keep going. I won't regret my decision. It doesn't matter what kind of obstacles or how many stand in my way, and I don't care how many armies I must get through. I'll do it alone if I have to!"

The weight behind Ye Fan's words was crushing and the power and determination that he exuded was absolute.

Being on the other end of the line didn't stop Han from reeling. The deafening declaration nearly burst his eardrums.

Han decided to give up.

He couldn't stop this young man after all.

"Alright then, Young Master. Since your mind is made, I will do everything I can to aid your cause. I wish you success. Your humble servant will be awaiting the arrival of the Dragon Master at Chu Sect!"

The winds howled fiercely at the peak of Mount Yunding, sending sand and dirt flying in the air.

After ending the call, Ye Fan stood there quietly and alone until evening arrived.

Chapter 1490 Activating the Dragon God Tokens

Winds came surging from the distance, filling the air with an evening chill.

Meanwhile, his Dragon God Tokens had been delivered across the globe.

A vast machine that had been carefully concealed for the past ten years began to move.

Numerous powerful presences began to emerge in the Middle East, Western Europe as well as the remote region of Antarctica.

As if summoned, they began to head swiftly for China.

The army that had trained for years would prove its worth in a day's battle.

"We've been waiting for this day for so long. Has it finally arrived?" Somewhere in Xijiang, a beautiful young woman murmured as she stared at the crimson jade hanging on her neck. It was glowing. She turned her eyes towards the distant east.

It was still going to take some time for the numerous Dragons to gather after he had summoned for them through the Dragon God Tokens.

Ye Fan could take those few days to complete the Greater Invoke the Celestial Sky Formation.

The formation at Yunzhou was but the primary formation in the greater formation that he planned to set up. He had two other secondary formations to set up too.

The three formations would form the perfectly balanced defense that would protect Ye Fan's loved ones in his absence.

Ye Fan wasn't going to set up the other two formations in Yunzhou.

The primary formation on Mount Yunding would suffice.

In his final night in Yunzhou, Ye Fan did what he had done as always and drove to Mufan Group to pick Qiu Mu-Cheng up from work.

"You're here early. You must have heard what I said yesterday. This is progress. You deserve a reward."

Qiu Mu-Cheng had raced downstairs as soon as it had been time to knock off work.

She had always been the last person to leave the office.

But she had begun to look forward to going home since Ye Fan had begun picking her up from work.

She didn't want to spend another minute in the office once it was time to knock off work.

Naturally, as the CEO of the company, Qiu Mu-Cheng could leave work anytime she wanted.

But as a leader of the company, she had to follow the rules and lead by example.

Unless there was an emergency, she would turn up for work and knock off work with the rest of the company.

Qiu Mu-Cheng saw the young man whom she had been looking forward to seeing the whole day when she got downstairs. Her eyes glowed while her lips split into a wide grin before she got into Ye Fan's car.

She wanted to make Ye Fan dinner when they got home but her husband stopped her.

"Let me make dinner today. You've had a hard day at work. You should rest."

Ye Fan appeared more thoughtful than he had been other nights.

He prepared a sumptuous spread and washed the dishes after they were done with dinner. He also helped Qiu Mu-Cheng dry her hair after her shower.

"What's up with you, Ye Fan? Did you do something wrong? Are you hiding something from me?"

Ye Fan's enthusiasm appeared out of place and soon roused Qiu Mu-Cheng's suspicions. She eyed her husband suspiciously.

"Nothing's up. There's nothing wrong with a man showering his wife with affection. Are you touched by my gestures? Are you going to give me a son?" Ye Fan grinned shamelessly.

Chapter 1490 Activating the Dragon God Tokens



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Ye Fan's smile was especially warm and indulgent tonight.

It felt like the first stirrings of spring in March.

The softness of his smile reflected the reluctance that he secretly felt against leaving his wife.

He stared at his lovely, mesmerizing wife and, for the barest of moment, wavered.

She was the only person who could soften the steely determination in his heart.

If he had met Qiu Mu-Cheng sooner and become her husband sooner, perhaps Ye Fan might have set aside his hate and desire for revenge.

But Ye Fan couldn't turn back now.

He had gone down this road for ten years.

He had gone too far. The only way was forward. No matter how appealing the warmth of his family and how mesmerizing the beauty of his wife, he could not turn back now.

The moon looked cold and lonely outside.

A chilly wind rippled across the evening air like a cold stream gushing down the mountains while warmth quietly filled the mansion on Mount Yunding, where a lovely young woman was blushing at the sight of a young man's smile.

Qiu Mu-Cheng was naturally embarrassed by what Ye

Fan had said.

Despite their many years of marriage, they had not truly behaved like a couple until the past year.

Qiu Mu-Cheng was no longer as embarrassed as she had been at first when she shared embraces and kisses with Ye Fan. Nevertheless, talk about having children still mortified Qiu Mu-Cheng.

Any mention of the subject would send her flushing like a ripened cherry and tensing up self-consciously.

She would feel her heart race and swell with both anticipation and uncertainty.

While Qiu Mu-Cheng's thoughts were racing wildly in her head, Ye Fan had left to get a small tub of water to soak her feet.

He had been teasing Qiu Mu-Cheng. He didn't honestly want children.

In fact, he had never thought about becoming a father.

He had poured his heart and soul on training and on planning Operation Sparks all these years.

In fact, marrying into the Qiu family and taking Qiu Mu-Cheng as his wife had been a part of his plan.

But Ye Fan had not foreseen that he would fall for Qiu Mu-Cheng.

Nevertheless, he had no intentions of having children with her.

He wasn't ready for it.

He wasn't ready to be a father.

Ye Fan didn't like to be unprepared and he didn't like unplanned surprises.

He was worried that he wouldn't be a good father too. He was worried that he would become his father and that his child would hate him like how he hated his father now.

Besides, how could he be a father when he wasn't doing a good job at being a husband?

"Come on, my dear wife. Let's soak your feet."

Ye Fan had gotten the small tub of warm water ready.

"Thank you, my dear husband."

This was Qiu Mu-Cheng's happiest moment in the day.

Mr Chu, the man who commanded Jiangdong and struck fear in the hearts of everyone, was just a gentle, loving husband before her. She brimmed with happiness.

The feeling of being surrounded by warmth and love must be something that every woman yearned for. Every woman relished for the sense of security and safety that she got from the man whom she loved.

Ye Fan had spent most of his time away for the past few years.

Qiu Mu-Cheng's thoughts would run wild during those

Chapter 1491 Familial Warmth

lonely nights.

She would wonder if Ye Fan was having an affair and if he was sharing his nights with another woman.

The uncertainty that she had felt then had been unbearable.

But that vanished whenever Ye Fan was back.

In its place was bliss and warmth.

Qiu Mu-Cheng's feet dipped into the small tub. Her cheeks were cupped in her palms and her eyes smiling. She looked like a young girl waiting for happiness to descend upon her.

It was time for her husband to scrub her feet.

Her husband was incredible.

He wasn't just a formidable fighter. He was great with the everyday stuff too.

Despite the thousands of attempts that Qiu Mu-Cheng had made, the dishes that she prepared couldn't compare to those that Ye Fan made.

Ye Fan's skills weren't confined to the kitchen. He was a great masseur as well.

She would melt like jelly under his hands. Her body would turn warm as she basked in the pleasure of the massage.

Qiu Mu-Cheng couldn't believe how perfect Ye Fan

appeared to be.

But this time, she had miscalculated.

Ye Fan didn't scrub her feet like he had always done. Instead, he slipped his shoes off and dumped his feet into the water as well.

"My dear wife, let's soak our feet together." Ye Fan grinned cheekily.

"No! I don't want to! Get your feet out...your feet are too big. You're going to ruin the tub. Ouch! You stepped on my foot..."

Qiu Mu-Cheng's feigned annoyance belied the happiness that she was feeling.

Qiu Mu-Cheng retired early that night.

Ye Fan, on the other hand, headed to the study to read. He would only retire late in the night.

"You've been with me for so long. I'm not sure if we'll meet again after I leave this time," Ye Fan muttered to himself as he brushed his fingers against the pages of the book.

Four words were printed in gold on the cover of the book. Book of Celestial Cloud.

Ye Fan had had his fair share of encounters with people and he had come across many strange and wondrous things over the years. This book was the only thing that had stayed by his side all this while.

It was this book that had helped Ye Fan rise from his humble origins to what he was today.

It had transformed Ye Fan from a useless child cast out from the Chu family into a man who now had the courage to challenge Chu Sect.

Ye Fan had this book to thank for where he was now.

But he had no idea what to do with it.

He originally had the intention to leave the book to the God of War, Ye Qing-Tian, and China.

After some careful and considered deliberation, Ye Fan had come to the conclusion that he had caused the Chinese martial arts circle significant damage and loss.

Those men and women might have deserved what they had gotten, but he had still been the one who had slain them.

Even though War God Castle had not pursued the matter and demand that he pay for those deaths, Ye Fan had believed that he should make amends for what he had done. It would be the right thing to do for his country.

He was a supreme grandmaster, after all. He should do something for his country.

Then, he had thought about it again and decided against leaving the book to China.

That was because he hadn't written this book.

The Book of Celestial Cloud had belonged to the

ancestors of the Chu family and these ancestors had decreed that only one who had the character “Tian” in their name could practice what was inside the book.

Ye Fan would be disrespecting the final wishes of the Chu family’s ancestors if he were to unilaterally give this book to China.

“Forget it. I’ll leave this here in the meantime.”

Ye Fan decided to leave the Book of Celestial Cloud where it was.

If he did not survive his storming of the Chu family, the book would simply fall into the hands of the luckiest person. He knew for certain that it wasn’t going to end up overseas.

Having finished the book, he locked it in his study.

Then, he washed up and got ready for bed.

Before he went to bed, he checked on Qiu Mu-Cheng and found that the silly woman had kicked her sheets off again.

“What are you going to do without your husband by your side?”

He smiled and shook his head before carefully pulling the sheets up to her shoulders again.

Chapter 1491 Familial Warmth



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Ye Fan returned to the study where he had made his bed.

Even till now, Ye Fan and Qiu Mu-Cheng were still sleeping in separate beds.

Ye Fan spent his nights studying the Book of Celestial Cloud. Worried that he might interrupt Qiu Mu-Cheng's sleep, he would take his rest in the study after he was done reading the Book of Celestial Cloud.

If Ye Fan didn't take the initiative to get into Qiu Mu-Cheng's bed, then she wasn't going to be the one to ask. It would be too embarrassing.

So, having tucked Qiu Mu-Cheng in, Ye Fan made his way back to the study.

The night was especially quiet today.

The wind was gentle and soft outside.

Ye Fan lay in bed but could find no rest. Thoughts cluttered his head.

Perhaps what Han had told him was what was keeping Ye Fan up.

Han had said that they had lost all contact with that man after he had headed to Japan.

Even though Ye Fan kept telling himself that he didn't care if the man lived or died, he couldn't stop his thoughts from wandering. Where was he right now? Why had he gone to Japan? He was the head of the Chu family and had armies of martial artists at his disposal. No manner of emergency would require his presence.

“Was it because of Tsukuyomi?” Ye Fan frowned.

He could find no other reason to explain why the head of the Chu family had to travel to Japan personally. Tsukuyomi Tenshin was the only reason he might do that.

“Well, he’ll find nothing but trouble and a world of pain,” murmured Ye Fan as he shook his head.

Ye Fan did not know the true extent of Tsukuyomi Tenshin’s powers.

The legendary goddess of the moon possessed supernatural powers like Goddess Nuwa of Chinese mythology.

Thousands of years had passed and Tsukuyomi Tenshin had been reborn in Suzumiya Eigetsu’s body. Her human vessel might prevent her from reaching her former heights of power, but there still remained few in the present world who could threaten her safety.

Even though Chu Zheng-Hong was more powerful than the rest, Ye Fan believed that he was still worlds apart from Tsukuyomi Tenshin.

In fact, Ye Fan wasn’t confident that he could take on Tsukuyomi Tenshin himself.

As Ye Fan continued wondering about Chu Zheng-Hong’s whereabouts, he suddenly heard the sound of footsteps in the dark.

Because he enjoyed sleeping in the nude, he felt chilly air against his naked skin the next moment.

Had someone just pulled his sheets away?

“Who is it?” he gasped out in alarm.

A soft and warm body slipped between his arms then.

It was a familiar scent and touch. Even her breathing and heartbeat sounded familiar.

Ye Fan knew whom the person in his arms was as soon as they touched.

He shook his head and smiled then.

He was an idiot.

There were only the two of them in the mansion.

Who else but Qiu Mu-Cheng would climb into his bed in the middle of the night?

“What’s wrong? Do you really want to give me a son?” Ye Fan smiled teasingly as he savored the warm and soft body in his arms.

Qiu Mu-Cheng curled herself within Ye Fan’s arms and wrapped her own around him tightly. Her voice sounded choked. “I had a nightmare. I dreamt that you left me for good and no matter how much I shouted, you didn’t look back.”

Her eyes turned teary and her arms tightened around Ye Fan.

Ye Fan didn’t say a word. He simply let her hold him and listened quietly to her as she spoke.

Chapter 1492 Departure

“Ye Fan, I want you to promise me that you’ll never leave without saying a word. You can’t leave home and not return for days. I’m the only one who gets to leave you. You can never leave me again. I won’t allow you to do anything dangerous or stupid,” she stared at Ye Fan suddenly and spoke to him in an extremely solemn tone.

Ye Fan’s heart spasmed then. He could feel it hurting.

But he looked as calm as always.

He brushed his fingers through Qiu Mu-Cheng’s long silky hair and spoke to her in a soothing voice. “You silly girl, it was just a dream. Things in dreams never happen. It’s late. You should get some sleep and stop thinking crazy thoughts.”

“No. I want you to promise me,” Qiu Mu-Cheng insisted stubbornly.

Ye Fan was left with no choice. “Alright, I promise you. I won’t leave and stay away from home for days and I won’t do anything dangerous. Are you happy now?”

His lips curled into a gentle, indulgent smile.

Yet that was simply a guise that hid the guilt that was wracking him.

“Yup.”

Qiu Mu-Cheng nodded in satisfaction. She soon fell asleep in Ye Fan’s arms.

This was the first time in years that she had been held so intimately by Ye Fan.

She felt safer and happier than she had ever felt before.

The young man's embrace was an amulet that chased away the terror she had felt in her dream.

She sank into deep slumber.

Ye Fan stared quietly at the beautiful woman in his arms and watched as her thick lashes fluttered in the night. It was a long while before he fell asleep.

"I'm sorry, Mu-Cheng."

The night passed quickly.

Ye Fan was gone when Qiu Mu-Cheng woke up the next morning.

She rushed out of the bedroom like a crazy woman.

There was no one in the living room. Breakfast had been laid out on the dining table. Steam rose from the glass of milk that had been warmed moments ago.

On the table was a note left by Ye Fan.

"My dear wife, I have to attend to some urgent matters in Fenghai. Don't worry, they're trivial matters. I'll contact you once I reach Fenghai. Remember to have your breakfast and have your meals regularly when I'm not around. I won't let you off if you lose weight during my absence. Another thing. I realized last night how good you felt in my arms. You're all soft and fleshy. Haha!"

The note was signed off by Ye Fan.

There was a postscript following his name. He told her not to miss him.

Qiu Mu-Cheng giggled after reading the note.

She looked down and stared at her chest, then protested weakly and abashedly. "That scoundrel, always taking advantage of me. He didn't have to sneak around though."

Qiu Mu-Cheng blushed faintly. She wanted to know what it felt like when the man you loved touched you intimately too.

As Qiu Mu-Cheng lost herself to the sweet memories of last night, Ye Fan was in the car and on his way out of Yunzhou. He was headed for Fenghai and was going to set up the secondary formation in the Greater Invoke the Celestial Sky Formation in his mother's residence.

"Fan, why didn't you wake Mu-Cheng up and say goodbye to her? She's going to be upset because you left without a word again."

Ye Yu-Yan was the one driving the car.

She was going to return home with Ye Fan too.

She didn't understand why Ye Fan had left without saying goodbye.

"Let her sleep a little longer," Ye Fan said softly. "She's been working herself too hard. It must be exhausting. I've left her a message. It'll do."

Chapter 1492 Departure

Ye Yu-Yan wouldn't know that the reason why Ye Fan hadn't woken Qiu Mu-Cheng hadn't been because he had wanted her to have more sleep but because he was afraid.

He was afraid that Qiu Mu-Cheng might beg him to stay and that he might consider doing that because she had asked.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

While Ye Fan was on his way to Fenghai, Jiangbei was still caught in the aftermath of the terrible massacre that had happened at West Lake.

Hordes of Chinese martial artists would protest outside War God Castle on Mount Yan every day and demand that War God Castle bring Ye Fan to justice and exact justice for the Chinese martial artists whom the young man had killed in Jiangbei.

But it was clear that their protests would not change anything.

Every country and its people would consider what they had to gain from doing something.

If the price that they were to pay was greater than what they would gain, the country would not proceed with said action.

In Ye Fan's case, War God Castle might be able to kill Ye Fan if they poured all their resources into the attempt.

But would it be worth it?

The answer was obvious.

Even if Ye Fan were in the wrong and even if War God Castle gave everything that they had to get rid of Ye Fan, that would not bring the dead Chinese martial artists back.

That was why this was the best possible outcome that they could hope for.

Besides, Ye Fan had his reasons for killing those people in Jiangbei.

That was why War God Castle couldn't possibly punish

and kill Ye Fan without taking into consideration why he had done what he had done.

Most of them knew that.

But the folks of Jiangbei couldn't accept the fact that Ye Fan had gone scot free after murdering their friends and families.

Lv Zi-Ming had belonged to the most powerful family in Jiangbei. His clan had had hundreds of members. But he was the only one left now.

He desperately wished that he could kill Ye Fan with his bare hands.

Yet no matter how much they hated Ye Fan, they knew that they were no match for Ye Fan even if they were to join forces. They could unite every martial artist in Jiangdong to fight Ye Fan and still be beaten by the latter within the first move.

That was why all they could do now was to incite the people and use the will of the people to exert pressure on War God Castle.

They wanted the God of War and the other supreme grandmasters to take Ye Fan out.

Lv Zi-Ming and the rest clearly overestimated the extent of their sway.

The will of the people meant little in the face of absolute power.

The King of Fighters wanted to answer the people's call and kill Ye Fan too.

But he couldn't. He knew that they were evenly matched.

It was tough enough to defeat a grandmaster, and even harder to kill one.

Besides, the King of Fighters wasn't sure that he could defeat Ye Fan in the first place.

"King of Fighters, Ye Fan deserves to die for what he's done! Please speak some sense into Sword Saint and the other supreme grandmasters..."

Dressed in gray robes, the King of Fighters was passing Mount Yan when Lv Zi-Ming and the others flocked towards him with the desperation of a drowning man seeing land.

The Lv family had managed to stop Lv Hua's first trial at the martial arts court because of the King of Fighters' help.

Lv Zi-Ming naturally pinned his hopes on Mo Gu-Cheng when it came to seeking revenge.

He knew that Mo Gu-Cheng harbored hostility towards Ye Fan.

Ye Fan had robbed Mo Gu-Cheng's son of his title as a supreme grandmaster and had slapped the King of Fighters in public.

Any idiot would know that of everyone in War God Castle, the King of Fighters, Mo Gu-Cheng was the one who most wanted Ye Fan dead.

Mo Gu-Cheng merely threw a glance at Lv Zi-Ming and the other folks from Jiangbei as they pleaded with him, before ignoring them completely and walking away.

"King of Fighters, on account of your years of friendship with my father, please help me and Jiangbei!" pleaded Lv

Zi-Ming tirelessly.

The King of Fighters stopped in his path. He had his back towards the crowd. His sleeves fluttered loudly in the chilly wind.

Mo Gu-Cheng finally spoke after a brief moment of silence.

“A word of advice. You should give up. War God Castle has come to a decision on the matter. No matter how you try to get the people to speak on your behalf, you won’t change anything. Return home. You’re just wasting your time here.”

Having said that, the King of Fighters upped and left, vanishing from their line of vision within moments and leaving in his wake Lv Zi-Ming and the group of Jiangbei residents utterly devastated.

“Is there no one in China who can do anything about Ye Fan? He’s just a young man from Jiangdong,” wailed Lv Zi-Ming as he fell to his knees and wept.

He realized then that he would never be able to avenge the hundreds of deaths in their clan.

Sword Saint and Tang Hao were present when the King of Fighters arrived at War God Castle.

The God of War, Ye Qing-Tian, was there as well.

“They just don’t know when to give up, do they? They’ve been protesting for days,” Tang Hao said exasperatedly as he stared out the window and down at the crowd of Jiangbei warriors who had gathered at the foot of the mountain.

“Why is that surprising? Imagine if you were the one whose family and friends were killed, but the murderer was allowed to go unpunished. You’d be as persistent as they are,” Mo Gu-Cheng said coldly as he stared right at Tang Hao.

Tang Hao was left floundering for words.

“You...I don’t know what to do with you!” Tang Hao was furious. He couldn’t be bothered to get into an argument with Mo Gu-Cheng. Instead, he simply turned his head away and returned to his seat.

“Alright, let’s not talk about what’s past. War God Castle will do its best to provide recompense to the kin of those who had lost their family. The Chinese martial arts circle will allocate every resource at its disposal to Jiangbei for the next ten years. I believe that a new martial arts star will emerge from Jiangbei soon.” Sword Saint ended the subject quickly before turning his laptop on.

Numerous photos appeared on the huge projection screen in front of them.

They were blurred and indistinct. Nevertheless, they could tell that these were photos of someone speeding across the sky at extremely high speed.

Every other photo that followed was of something similar.

“That’s a supreme grandmaster! There’s more than one of them!”

Mo Gu-Cheng’s pupils contracted when he realized what he was looking at. His eyes were filled with alarm.

Long-distance flight was a defining mark of the supreme grandmaster.

While grandmasters might be able to achieve flight across short distances, their capabilities and level of cultivation prevented them from achieving true long-distance flight.

The photos clearly showed that these men and women were at least a hundred meters away from the ground.

“That’s right.” Sword Saint nodded. “God of War and I too believe that they are supreme grandmasters. We couldn’t get any clear photos of them though. All we know now is that they aren’t supreme grandmasters from China. We will need further investigation to determine who they are.”

“Where were they discovered? Are they in China? Are you saying that multiple supreme grandmasters of unknown nationalities have infiltrated China?” The King of Fighters tensed up suddenly. His expression and tone turned solemn.

The discovery of supreme grandmasters of foreign nationalities in China was akin to that of a nuclear weapon that had been secretly shipped across the Chinese borders.

This was a grave matter that concerned national security.

There was no way the King of Fighters could remain calm.

Sword Saint shook his head. “They haven’t entered China. These photos were taken outside our borders but they were taken dangerously close to our borders. We should take all necessary precautions and be prepared for the worst.”

“Okay.” Tang Hao and the King of Fighters nodded

unhappily.

“The appearance of multiple supreme grandmasters around our borders is a serious concern that requires our attention. It doesn’t matter even if they’re not hostile parties. We should still look into the matter and find out where they’re from and what they want,” Tang Hao said solemnly.

“Let my son Wu-Ya look into this. He’s recently recovered from his injuries. We should give him a job to do. It’ll do him some good.” The King of Fighters suggested that his son Mo Wu-Ya lead the investigation before Sword Saint or Tang Hao could discuss whom should they send to look into the matter.

“That sounds like a good idea. Wu-Ya is a talented young man with great potential. This is a good opportunity for him. It’ll be easier to knight him as a supreme grandmaster if he has the experience and results to prove his worth.” Sword Saint nodded. Tang Hao and the others did not say a word.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Mo Wu-Ya was the best person to be sent on such a task.

The others wouldn't be able to hold their own against a supreme grandmaster.

As for the King of Fighters and the other supreme grandmasters, they were the six pillars of the nation and naturally shouldn't be flaunting their presence so easily.

"Wu-Ya has had nothing to do since he returned from Japan. It's time for him to get involved in the matters of the state." The God of War, who had been silent all this while, piped in. "But you should remind Wu-Ya that his mission is to investigate the matter and not cause any conflict or tension. Should anything happen, he is not to act rashly. Return and report the matter to us. We shall deliberate what to do next."

Mo Wu-Ya was a hotblooded young man, after all. Ye Qing-Tian was worried that he might get easily provoked over a slight and get into a dispute with a foreign martial artist.

This wasn't something that the God of War or any of the other supreme grandmasters wished to see.

"Don't worry. My son isn't like other young men who disrespect the law and do what they like. I'll tell him what you said. In fact, I'll head back right now and speak to him immediately. Sword Saint, you can send me the photos and the locations of where they were shot later."

The King of Fighters left Mount Yan after the meeting ended and returned home.

He was to inform his son, Mo Wu-Ya, to look into the appearance of the strange martial artists and find out where they had come from and what they wanted.

“The King of Fighters’ temper is getting worse. Qing-Tian was simply giving him a word of advice. He didn’t have to give him that sort of attitude.” Tang Hao shook his head and smiled wryly after the King of Fighters was gone.

“You can’t blame him for that. Some people simply went too far,” Sword Saint shot back. Tang Hao shut up immediately.

He knew whom Sword Saint was talking about.

Sword Saint turned towards Ye Qing-Tian. “Qing-Tian, do you really believe that Ye Fan can shoulder the responsibilities of the nation?”

Ye Qing-Tian frowned. “What are you trying to say?”

“Nothing at all. I’m just trying to tell you that I won’t agree to your recommendation to admit Ye Fan into War God Castle and grant him lordship. I believe that I’m not the only one who opposes your proposal. The King of Fighters, the Jiangbei martial arts circle and the tens of millions of martial artists in China won’t agree too! He’s a wildcard and I’m not going to allow a wildcard to join the most powerful martial arts organization in China.”

The six great supreme grandmasters of War God Castle possessed the greatest authority in the Chinese martial arts circle.

However, while the Phoenix Empress and Ice Emperor were part of the six pillars of the nation and enjoyed great respect from everyone, they wielded little true authority.

They were away from War God Castle most of the time and would find it challenging to assert their authority even if they wanted to.

Their titles as the six great lords of War God Castle were simply that. A title.

Sword Saint, the King of Fighters and Tang Hao were the lords who wielded true power over the Chinese martial arts circle.

They were the ones who dictated how resources were deployed and allocated to different regions of the country and the ones who determined the path for the Chinese martial arts circle's progress.

As for the God of War, Ye Qing-Tian, his incredible strength meant that he held an equally incredible sway over the nation.

That was why Ye Qing-Tian held a unique place in the Chinese martial arts circle.

Even though he had not been made one of the three lords permanently stationed at War God Castle, Sword Saint and the others would seek his advice concerning all serious matters of the Chinese martial arts circle.

In fact, one could arguably claim that Ye Qing-Tian's will represented the will of War God Castle.

In addition, Ye Qing-Tian also possessed the power to exercise a veto against decisions made by the three lords of War God Castle. This was a power put in place to ensure that the lords could not abuse or exploit their authority.

War God Castle could not carry out any plans or missions that Ye Qing-Tian disapproved of.

But that was the only power that Ye Qing-Tian had been granted. He held no other formal powers.

For example, he had to get the approval of Sword Saint and the rest in order to grant Ye Fan the title of supreme grandmaster.

War God Castle was the only authority in China who could grant such a title. Ye Qing-Tian did not possess the authority to do so.

Thus, a delicate balance of power had been struck between Ye Qing-Tian and the three other lords of War God Castle. Nevertheless, their opinions and views on matters had been similar for many years.

It had stayed that way until Ye Fan had appeared. His appearance had caused a divide in the opinions regarding the young man in War God Castle.

That divide had persisted from the very beginning when Ye Qing-Tian had wanted to grant Ye Fan the title of supreme grandmaster to when War God Castle had to decide whether they should kill Ye Fan for the bloodbath that he had caused in Jiangbei. They remained divided now over whether they should allow Ye Fan to join War God Castle as one of their primary lords.

"I've explained my reasons to you. Ye Fan might be young and hotblooded, but he's still a principled man with scruples. I recommended making him a lord of War God Castle because I believe that the position and the national duty that came along with it could help rein him in. Once he's part of the system, we'll be able to turn him from a feral horse into a champion warhorse! That's the only way to ensure that Ye Fan will work for the greater good of the country." Ye Qing-Tian made another attempt to convince Sword Saint to change his mind.

The latter simply shook his head. "You want to tame him with the burden of responsibility? What if you fail? He'll only know the rush of power but not the responsibility

that comes with power after he becomes a lord of War God Castle. A lordship in War God Castle isn't child's play. I won't risk the future of our nation's martial arts circle. You don't have to try and persuade me to change my mind. I won't agree to your recommendation unless I see proof that he's a changed man."

Sword Saint turned and left without giving Ye Qing-Tian a chance for a rebuttal.

He left Ye Qing-Tian and Tang Hao behind him, smiling wryly at each other.

"It seems that it's not going to be an easy feat to get Ye Fan a position as one of War God Castle's lords," Ye Qing-Tian released a long and rare sigh.

The sentiments towards Ye Fan from all levels of the Chinese martial arts circle had been extremely negative since the Jiangbei massacre. Everyone from War God Castle to the provincial martial arts circle loathed the man.

Even Sword Saint had begun to question Ye Fan's character.

"Don't make him a lord then. Why are you so fixated on having Ye Fan join War God Castle? He's still young and inexperienced. He might have courage on his side, but he still has a long way to go before he can deal with important national matters."

Honestly, Tang Hao had been surprised and puzzled at Ye Qing-Tian's recommendation.

After all, Ye Fan was awfully young.

It wasn't wise to grant such a young man such an important and powerful office.

Ye Qing-Tian shook his head and sighed. His voice sounded heavy as he spoke slowly.

“You don’t understand what I’m trying to do at all. Ever since I first saw Ye Fan, my instincts have been telling me that he’s going to be the one who decides whether the Chinese martial arts circle will rise to glory again. He’ll determine if we surpass Chu Sect and establish our supremacy on the world stage. He might just be the person whom I’ve been searching for nearly a hundred years to lead the Chinese martial arts circle into its age of renaissance.”

“I’m not recommending him to join War God Castle because I think the position will serve him well. I’m hoping that the Chinese martial arts circle can ride on his coattails someday in the future. He’ll lead us all to glory and prosperity. Chu Sect was able to dominate the world because a rare prodigy was born amongst the three families. He led the Chu Sect to an age of glory that lasted hundreds of years to the present day.”

Tang Hao was dumbstruck.

He stared stupidly at the God of War as the latter’s words sounded repeatedly in his head.

“Are you saying that China...has to ride on his coattails?”
Tang Hao blurted.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Tang Hao had always known that the God of War had a high regard for Ye Fan.

But he had not expected the God of War to regard Ye Fan so highly.

He had placed the future of the Chinese martial arts circle on Ye Fan's shoulders.

"Is Ye Fan...really that incredible?" Tang Hao's eyes were filled with disbelief. He found the entire affair incredulous.

Ye Qing-Tian's opinion of Ye Fan seemed so positive that it verged on being surreal.

But Ye Qing-Tian didn't seem surprised by Tang Hao's reaction.

He knew the significance of his assessment of Ye Fan.

He also knew the degree of excellence and strength that a person must possess in order to shoulder the fate of an entire nation.

"I'm not sure. It's just a feeling that I have. Time will tell if my instincts turn out to be right," said the God of War with a voice filled with both solemnity and anticipation.

Then, he walked out of the hall.

Ye Qing-Tian stopped at the doorway suddenly and turned towards Tang Hao. "I'm going to be away for a few days. Let me know if there's news from the King of Fighters."

Tang Hao was clearly still caught in his earlier shock. It took him a long while to recover from his daze and blurt out a single word.

“Sure.”

Meanwhile, across the ocean, in America.

It was evening and the lights had come on.

The streets were streaming with people.

Couples had their arms around each other while parents led their children by the hand as they walked down the streets.

Some of them appeared to be bickering and others simply chatting. Life and its variant expressions were being played out in the bustling city at all times.

Somewhere in the city's suburban area was Chu Sect. Compared to the buzz that had happened during the day, it seemed a lot quieter.

A few kids were playing in the courtyard of the Chu family estate.

An old man made his way out of his room slowly and began roaming the estate.

He would hand out candy to the children that he bumped into and trade those treats for answers to a few simple questions.

If Ye Fan were here right now, he would know whom this old man was. He was Han, the spy whom Ye Fan had planted in the Chu family.

More than two years had passed since they had last bidden each other farewell in Yunzhou.

Han had aged significantly since then.

His eyes looked considerably duller.

The wind blew his snowy white hair into disarray. He had stood tall and straight in the past but now, his back was slightly bent with age.

Han's circumstances seemed to have suffered a drastic change over the past two years.

The look of confidence and pride he once had in his eyes had vanished.

"What did you just say? There's an incident in Japan as well? They need immediate reinforcements? They're all useless! Gather everyone involved in the hall now. We're going to have a meeting." The furious voice of a young man filled the air. It was coming from somewhere in front of Han.

This young man was no other than Chu Qi-Tian. He was basking in glory and power in the Chu family now.

His father, Chu Zheng-Liang, had control over the whole Chu clan.

As his son, Chu Qi-Tian naturally enjoyed an elevation in his status as well.

He was now managing a huge part of the family's finances.

It was clear that Chu Qi-Tian was not having a good day and that he had not had one for some time.

Incidents had been plaguing the family businesses spread across the globe over the past few days. Some subsidiary organizations that had once pledged their

loyalty to the Chu family had renounced their allegiance. They no longer followed the Chu family's lead and paid any tribute to the clan.

The culmination of these unfortunate spate of incidents was giving Chu Qi-Tian a terrible headache as he fretted over how to deal with them. That explained his incessant loud cursing as he headed to the meeting hall.

He stopped in his tracks suddenly when he passed Han.

"Who are you? What are you doing here so late at night?"

They were in the center of the Chu family compound, where the residences of the family's upper echelons and elders were located.

The average person was not permitted on these grounds.

The sudden appearance of an unfamiliar face in the middle of the night naturally caused Chu Qi-Tian some alarm.

"My apologies, Young Master. I made the wrong turn and ended up here. I'm sorry for disturbing your peace. I'll leave right now." Han kept his head down as he spoke deferentially. He was the very picture of a humble servant.

He turned and started to walk away.

"Stop right there!" Chu Qi-Tian barked at him then. "Look at me. I want to see your face."

Han had no choice but to do as he had been told.

Chu Qi-Tian burst out into laughter when he saw Han's face.

His laughter was arrogant, sneering and grated on the ears.

“I was wondering why I found your face familiar. I remember now. You’re my uncle’s lackey. You used to enjoy my uncle’s favor. I tried to ask you for help a few times but you ignored me then. You certainly acted all high and mighty. Look at what’s become of you! Why are you so meek now? Where’s that air of authority you used to have? Where’s that power that you used to hold?” Chu Qi-Tian laughed smugly as he mocked Han as the victorious would those defeated by their hand.

Han simply kept his head down and didn’t say a word.

“Get out of here now! You’re in my way!” The malicious mirth on Chu Qi-Tian’s face vanished without a trace as he shoved his foot into Han and kicked him aside. Chu Qi-Tian yelled threateningly at the old man. “You lorded over me when you enjoyed my uncle’s trust and favor. But look at you now. You didn’t expect this at all, did you? If not for your decades of service in the Chu family, I would have killed you the day my father took control over the Chu family. Why are you still standing around? Keep your head down if you want to live a little longer. Don’t let me see you hanging around places you’re not supposed to hang around. Otherwise, you’ll get a lot worse than a kick the next time!”

Having said that, he led the men behind him away.

Han bore the pain bravely and struggled to his feet.

“Grandpa Han, are you alright? Brother Tian went too far. He shouldn’t bully an old man.” A kid who had gotten candy from Han earlier ran over and helped Han up.

Consoled, Han smiled at the boy. “I’m fine. I’m a sprightly old man! I told you to ask around and find out something

for me earlier. Have you found anything?”

Han appeared to know these children very well.

He had been the former head of the family’s loyal servant who had always been by Chu Zheng-Hong’s side. Naturally, he was familiar with children of the Chu family’s higher ups.

“I did, Grandpa Han. Mum said that she’s hasn’t seen Elder Xuan and Elder Ming for some time. They must be out on a mission and have not returned to the Chu family,” the children said.

Han was delighted. He carefully set aside that information in his head.

Han had been using all means available to him to find out the true extent of the Chu family’s strength and resources ever since Ye Fan had decided that they were going to storm the Chu family soon.

Elder Xuan and Elder Ming were known for being the Chu family’s most powerful fighters. They were also the greatest threats to Ye Fan. Han had to keep an extra eye on them.

He was elated to find out that the elders might be out on a mission and won’t be back any time soon.

This was great news for Ye Fan.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

The meeting hall in the Chu family was one that was lavishly decorated. That evening, it was brightly lit, its lights driving away the darkness of the night.

Seated in the room were the upper echelons of the Chu family.

They currently had their heads buried in their documents and matching frowns on their faces. A certain kind of solemnity hung heavily in the room.

After a long while, an old man finally slammed his fist on the table. He glared at Chu Qi-Tian and thundered furiously at the young man. "What's going on? Seventy-two families that had sworn their allegiance to the Chu family were decimated over the course of a few days. They were massacred in a single night. Another fifty-eight families have disavowed themselves from us and declared their sovereignty. This is the first time something like this has happened since the founding of the Chu family. You've only taken over the management of the family business for a few months. How did you manage to make a mess out of everything so quickly? Chu Qi-Tian, what did you do?"

The white-bearded old man wished he could smack Chu Qi-Tian on the head with his walking stick.

The other elders of the Chu family were equally shocked and angered when they found out about the dire state that the Chu family was in.

They had lost the allegiance of more than a hundred families and groups over the course of a few months.

That count exceeded the count that they had accumulated over the past hundred years.

"Grandfather, I...have no clue what's going on too," Chu

Qi-Tian muttered meekly, his voice filled with terror and guilt and his head bowed.

The young master of the Chu family showed no hint of the arrogance and audacity that he had flaunted in front of Han earlier. Instead, he appeared meek and humbled before these elders, like a child who had done something wrong.

“You don’t know? How could you say that? Everything was fine while Han was managing the family clan’s finances. But you’ve barely taken over before disaster struck. You’re in charge. How could you tell us that you have no idea what’s going on?”

The elders of the Chu family were infuriated when they heard what Chu Qi-Tian had said.

These family clans might not be the cornerstone of the Chu family’s power but they had been the source of a good half of the Chu family’s wealth.

Yet the Chu family had lost more than a hundred of them within days. This was a devastating blow that was going to seriously disrupt their businesses.

A stable source of income was required to sustain this vast empire.

The Chu family’s operations were going to be severely affected now that they had lost a huge chunk of their regular income.

Chu Qi-Tian was the person currently in charge of the family clan’s finances. He naturally shouldered the blame.

Chu Zheng-Liang wanted to put in a few words for his son but he knew that wouldn’t do either of them any

good.

As the head of the Chu family, he couldn't be seen openly siding with his son.

He had no choice but to question Chu Qi-Tian himself.

"Tian, tell us honestly. What have you done? There must be a reason for why our allies are getting killed or disavowing themselves from us."

Chu Qi-Tian nearly broke down in tears.

"Dad, I didn't do anything. I assumed responsibility for the clan's finances only a few months ago. I have been trying to learn the ropes this whole time. I didn't do anything behind your backs. You have to believe me!"

Chu Qi-Tian felt terribly aggrieved.

When he had been given the responsibility to run the Chu family clan's finances, he had thought that this was the beginning of his rise to power. Sooner or later, he was going to run the entire clan.

He had not expected a crisis to strike when he had barely gotten familiar with his duties.

He swore to god that he hadn't done anything.

The meeting went on as everyone continued to question Chu Qi-Tian on what he had done. Then, someone barged into the room.

"What's the matter? Can't you tell that we're in the middle of a meeting? You shouldn't be barging into the room without our express permission." Everyone was furious. One of the elders blew up immediately when they saw someone interrupting the meeting without their approval.

The man apologized profusely.

“Alright now. What’s the matter? Tell us,” said Chu Zheng-Liang, who was seated at the front of the table.

“Master, we just received news from Africa...23 African family clans affiliated to the Chu family have been decimated. The heads of these families were killed and the businesses under the families’ names taken over by someone else!”

What?

“That’s...impossible!”

Everyone reeled with shock.

Many of them had widened their eyes in disbelief.

In fact, some had jumped up from their seats in shock.

“There’s trouble in Africa too?”

That was when everyone realized that something fishy was going on here.

A spate of incidents had befallen the family clans affiliated to the Chu family across the globe, spanning from Africa and Asia to Western Europe. Could this truly be a coincidence?

They didn’t think so!

“Someone’s behind this. I think we have a target painted on our backs,” Chu Zheng-Liang said coldly and with a stormy look on his face.

His words were filled with a cold fury.

His fingers had tightened into fists without his knowing.

“It does seem that something fishy is going on. It’s been years since someone has dared to challenge the Chu family. I can’t help but feel a little excited. I wonder who our enemy is? Who dares to pit themselves against us?”

The elders in the room burned with rage. They seemed to be seized by a sudden fervor.

“Send our guards to these affected regions to conduct an investigation. They’re to employ all means at their disposal to find out who is behind this. The Chu family’s been lying low for many years. Perhaps some folks have forgotten our might. We can’t have vermin trying to climb all over us.” Chu Zheng-Liang flipped his sleeve and bellowed furiously, his voice booming like thunder and filling the hall.

That night, numerous martial artists left the Chu family and headed to all corners of the globe to investigate the mastermind behind the recent spate of incidents.

After the meeting had ended, Chu Qi-Tian let loose a long sigh of relief. What a terrible ordeal that had been.

Luckily, he had escaped unscathed.

He had been convinced that he was going to be punished severely for the catastrophe that had occurred during his watch.

“Dad, if there’s nothing else, I’ll return and take my rest.” Chu Qi-Tian excused himself after everyone else had left.

“Get back here! Rest? How can you rest when we have a crisis on our hands?” Chu Zheng-Liang yelled unhappily at his son.

Chu Qi-Tian was overcome by helplessness. "There's nothing I can do anyway. I can't even beat a grandmaster."

"I'm glad you know that," Chu Zheng-Liang snorted. "I told you to spend more time training with your master. Have you done as I told you to?"

Chu Qi-Tian nodded. "I went to Chu Sect as you told me to. I would turn up every week at my master's for training, but I never managed to see her. It's been more than six months. I've not seen hide nor hair of her."

"You've not seen her in six months?" Chu Zheng-Liang frowned when he heard that.

That was when it struck him. He had not seen the sect leader of Chu Sect for nearly a year.

"Has she gone into seclusion?" asked Chu Zheng-Liang.

Chu Qi-Tian shook his head, then shrugged. "Who knows? That's just my master. She's never to be found most of the time. You just have to be really lucky if you want to catch her."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

ly, Chu Qi-Tian had a feeling that Tang Yun didn't regard him as her disciple at all.

ndfather had requested Tang Yun to take Chu Qi-Tian as her disciple. But Chu Qi-Tian couldn't remember the number of times that Tang Yun had visited him over the years.

he barely saw his master more than a few times a year.

as a disciple of the sect leader of Chu Sect was just a title. He had not gained any tangible progress in his cultivation from Tang Yun's instruction.

was the last time you saw her?" Chu Zheng-Liang asked again.

Qi-Tian thought for a moment.

some time ago. The last time I saw my master was more than six months ago, at the funeral for our Chu Sect was attacked then and she appeared to fight the intruder. I never saw her since then," said Chu Qi-Tian exasperatedly.

been that long? Has our sect leader gone into seclusion? No matter. Your master is an important figure busy with sect matters. It makes sense that she has no time to instruct you. I'll pick a few martial artists from your family for you. You can seek their advice if you have any questions about cultivation. You have to reach the level of the grandmaster as soon as possible!"

is running out, son. If you want to become the head of the Chu family, you must rise to the level of the grandmaster before you turn fifty. Otherwise, it doesn't matter how hard I vouch for you. The rules of our

ances
of the
voice
son.

Chu Qi
determ
his vo
lously
grand
Unlike
pure a
dead

"That
father
great

Chu Z
the ro

The s
gone.

He re
study

The c
of Ch
Jiang
every

Chu Z
the da

He ha
inves

There

ancestors forbid you from assuming the position of head of the Chu family,” Chu Zheng-Liang said patiently. His voice was filled with the hopes that he had pinned on his son.

Chu Qi-Tian nodded. He replied with confidence and determination. One could discern the fierce ambition in his voice. “Don’t worry, Dad. Even Chu Tian-Fan, that lousy bastard, managed to get himself made a supreme grandmaster. I’m not going to disappoint our family clan. Unlike that bastard, the blood that runs in my veins is pure and untainted. My achievements will surpass that dead bastard child!”

“That’s the attitude! My son, Qi-Tian, is born to rule. Your father believes that you will become the Chu family’s greatest pride and joy in the future.”

Chu Zheng-Liang smiled and watched as Chu Qi-Tian left the room.

The smile on his face vanished as soon as his son was gone.

He returned to his study and picked up a folder on his study desk.

The contents of the document were regarding the revival of China’s Unrivalled Grandmaster and his feats in Jiangbei, which had struck terror in the hearts of everyone in the province.

Chu Zheng-Liang had received this information earlier in the day but he had had his suspicions on its veracity.

He had sent someone to infiltrate China and conduct an investigation.

There was no other way. The groups and organizations

that they had planted in China had been rooted out completely.

He had to resort to unorthodox means to obtain this information.

That meant that its accuracy was still suspect!

“Hopefully, it’s just a baseless rumor. Otherwise, the Chu family’s going to find itself faced with a terrifying foe,” murmured Chu Zheng-Liang worriedly to himself. Creasing his brow was the thick lines of trepidation and concern.

Chu Zheng-Liang had only faced Ye Fan in battle once. It had happened a year ago, out at sea off the borders of Japan.

But he had realized how terrifying and unpredictable the young man had been.

It would be horrifying if he had managed to come back to life after being slain by the Chu Sect’s sect leader.

“It’s probably nothing but misinformation. Unless the scoundrel is an immortal, he can’t possibly escape from the jaws of death every time!” Chu Zheng-Liang frowned and muttered to himself in his study. Outside the study, the moon spilled across the night and lit the darkness with a dim glow.

His words seemed to be a prayer and an attempt at comforting himself.

After a long while, Chu Zheng-Liang sighed.

“What a mess.”

Ye Fan arrived at Fenghai as the Chu family sent their martial artists out to investigate the spate of strange incidents that had occurred across the globe.

Rows of pine and bamboo shoots lined the mansion while the fragrance of orchids and plum blossoms filled the air.

In the center of the mansion was a huge lake. A thin layer of ice had formed at the edge of the lake. The calm surface of the lake was like a mirror that caught the reflection of the mountains around the lake.

At the side of the lake stood a young man, who appeared to be underdressed for the weather. He was fishing.

The cedar trees and bamboo shoots planted around the lake swayed violently under the force of the wintry winds.

But the young man appeared unaffected by the cold.

Neither wind, nor rain, nor hail nor snow affected him.

A polite voice emerged from the phone that was next to him suddenly.

“Dragon Master, the first stage of Operation Sparks has ended. The Dragon God Hall has successfully dismantled the Chu family’s network of affiliated family clans and groups in Asia, Africa and Europe. This will be a devastating blow to the Chu family’s finances. They’re not going to have a good winter this year. Another piece of great news. The Chu family’s sent numerous martial artists across the world to investigate the destruction of their network of affiliated family clans. It was an unwise decision on their part. Dragon Master, the Chu family is at their weakest right now. Our success will be guaranteed if we attack now!”

On the other end of the line was Han reporting the successful missions Dragon God Hall had recently completed.

His voice was filled with excitement and joy.

He had been worried that the time wasn't right.

But then Ye Fan had started to carry out his plan and he had come to realize that everything had unfolded as Ye Fan had planned.

Ye Fan might just create a miracle of the millennia by being the first person who successfully led Dragon God Hall into storming the Chu family and taking down the most powerful martial arts family clan in the world.

Yet Ye Fan seemed calm in the face of Han's announcement.

"Han, it's not going to be that easy. If the success of my plan rests on the absence of a few guards, I wouldn't have had to plan ten years for this. We probably don't know the true power that rests behind the Chu family," Ye Fan said solemnly.

Ye Fan had had bold guesses about the true extent of the Chu family's resources and might.

He had made plans to take on the entire Chu Sect as well.

They had only managed to draw a few martial artists away from the Chu family. This wasn't going to decide the success of his plan.

"Stick to the plan. Such small commotions won't affect the Chu family's foundation but they'll keep my uncle and cousin busy for some time," said Ye Fan coolly.

Ye Fan didn't place too much import on the earlier stages of his plan.

He knew that the source of the Chu family's might lay in its vast armies of powerful martial artists.

He might have cut off the source of their wealth, but the resultant panic and chaos was only a temporary distraction. The lack of funding would not hurt them where it truly counted.

If he really wanted the Chu family to submit to him, he would have to show them power that would inspire complete fear and awe.

Brute force and power were the only two things in this world that would make someone yield to you completely.

Han ended the call shortly.

A tall and pretty woman walked out of the room then. She placed a coat over Ye Fan thoughtfully.

"Fan, it's cold outside. You should put on a coat. Mu-Cheng's going to yell at you again if she finds out you're underdressed for the cold," Ye Yu-Yan said softly and with a hint of coyness in her voice.

Since she had been a child, she had been the subject of other people's concern and affections. This was the first time that she was expressing concern for someone else. In fact, it was the first time he was doing so for a man.

As a young lady in her prime, Ye Yu-Yan was naturally a little embarrassed.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

In the past, Ye Yu-Yan would never have expected that she would express concern for Ye Fan one day.

She had always been a proud child and had never truly shown any regard for this cousin of hers.

Then, she had witnessed Ye Fan's strength and might and had been won over by his strength and talent.

In comparison to the waves of emotions that Ye Yu-Yan was currently experiencing, Ye Fan appeared calm and composed.

He tugged at the coat that Ye Yu-Yan had placed on his shoulders, thanked her casually and continued his fishing.

Ye Yu-Yan appeared slightly crestfallen when she noted Ye Fan's indifference.

Ye Fan's attitude towards her had remained unchanged all this while. He was distant and showed no hint of the kind of familial warmth and intimacy that family members shared with one another.

But she had only herself to blame for that.

She had been obnoxious and proud when she had been a kid. Her arrogant ways must have hurt her cousin deeply.

Ye Yu-Yan sighed at that thought. One could discern the faint traces of regret lining her brow.

She had not shown Ye Fan any kindness when he had been ostracized by the family.

Ye Fan was famous now. There were plenty of people dying to please him and win his favor. She was just one of many and no one special.

She had not bothered to show him kindness when he had been down on his luck. But now, here she was, trying to earn his favor after he had risen to fame and fortune.

The same gesture of kindness that would have meant a world of difference then meant little now.

Sometimes, Ye Yu-Yan would wonder what would have happened if she had not been so obnoxious and arrogant then. If she had been kinder to her cousin, perhaps Ye Fan would treat her differently now.

They might share a close friendship like the one that Ye Fan shared with Shin Yu-Xiang.

But it was too late now.

Ye Yu-Yan shook her head. She cast aside the tangled thoughts in her head and assumed the look of deference that she had always shown Ye Fan. "Instructor Chu, I've booked the plane tickets to Yanjing. There's a car waiting for you outside. When do you intend to head to Jianghai International Airport?"

There were three formations in the Greater Invoke the Celestial Sky Formation.

The primary formation had been set up in Yunzhou while the other two secondary formations would be placed in Jingzhou and Yanjing.

Ye Fan had three persons whom he must protect at all costs.

The first was his wife, Qiu Mu-Cheng.

The second was his mother, Ye Xi-Mei.

The third was his childhood friend, Xu Lei.

Ye Fan had known of Xu Lei's feelings for him for a long time.

But there was nothing he could do about it.

They had missed each other.

If he had not been cast out of the Chu family and had not been separated from Xu Lei for a decade, he might have ended up marrying her instead.

But fate enjoyed playing games. The calamity that had befallen Ye Fan then had cost them love.

When they had next met again after ten years, the young man whom Xu Lei had grown up with had become someone's husband.

Honestly, a ripple of emotion had stirred in Ye Fan's heart when he had found out that Xu Lei had been the young girl that he had grown up with.

But it had been too late. He already had a family and a wife. He had left Xu Lei with a lifelong regret.

Even though he couldn't promise Xu Lei a life together, he could still promise her a life of happiness that was free from worry.

He wasn't doing this because he was obsessed with her or because he still loved her. He was doing this because she had stayed by his side during his darkest moments in the Chu family.

Ye Fan was a deeply loyal man who stood by his family, his friends and his lover.

He would never leave someone who had treated him kindly in the lurch.

Not Qiu Mu-Cheng, not Xu Lei, not even Shin Yu-Xiang, whom he had gotten into fights and skipped classes with during their schooling days.

He had completed the secondary formation in Jingzhou during the few days he had spent in the city. The Ye family home was now protected by the formation in Jingzhou.

Besides Mount Yunding Villa, the Ye family home was the safest place in the whole of Jiangdong.

He should be heading to Yanjing next to set up the formation that would protect Xu Lei as she held the fort in Yanjing.

But not yet. Ye Fan shook his head. "We're not in a rush. Let's wait a little while longer."

"Wait?" Ye Yu-Yan frowned. A look of puzzlement flickered across her eyes. She asked quietly next. "Do you have an appointment with someone?"

Ye Fan simply smiled wordlessly and continued fishing.

That only served to pique Ye Yu-Yan's curiosity.

In the past few days, she had returned home to pay a visit to her parents once and had spent the rest of her time by Ye Fan's side.

She could not remember Ye Fan making an appointment with anyone.

She couldn't think of anyone whom Ye Fan would risk missing a flight for. After all, one had to consider his status in Jingzhou and in whole of Jiangdong. There were few people who could keep Ye Fan waiting patiently for his arrival.

“Could it be Lei San?” The only name that came to Ye Yu-Yan’s mind after some furious thought was that of the head of Jingzhou.

But then she thought about it again and decided that it couldn’t be the head of the Lei family.

Lei San had brought his whole family to visit Ye Fan on the first day that the latter had arrived in Jingzhou.

The high-ranking officials of the city’s administration had also paid a visit to Ye Fan.

Every bigwig in Jingzhou who should have paid Ye Fan a visit had done so.

No matter how hard Ye Yu-Yan racked her brains, she couldn’t figure out whom her cousin was waiting for.

Two hours passed.

The sun was setting, its last rays spilling across the lands and dying them in hues of red and orange.

Ye Yu-Yan couldn’t hold it in anymore. “Fan, who are you waiting for? Tell me and I’ll drop him a call and get him to hurry up. It’s getting late. We’re going to miss our flight if we don’t leave soon.”

They were fast approaching the time when their plane was going to take off and Ye Yu-Yan was shaking with anxiety.

But Ye Fan showed no signs of moving.

He sat there quietly, fishing under the setting sun.

The evening breeze stirred his sleeves and the loose strands of hair before his forehead gently.

Time continued to pass. Ye Yu-Yan was going to urge Ye Fan to leave when she saw the ripples coursing across the surface of the lake.

“He’s here.”

Ye Fan’s soft murmur sent the golden leaves on the tree rustling madly.

Ye Yu-Yan gazed into the distance instantly.

There was a man in white robes standing under the crimson sun, stepping on the shadow of the setting sun as he slowly walked towards them.

His white robes fluttered while the hair before his forehead stirred lightly in the wind. Light and shadow fell across his face.

He cut a dashing figure in the sunset.

The intimidating aura emanating from this man instinctively drew awe and respect from others.

Accompanying that aura was a shocking sense of heaviness that was akin to the weight of a mountain.

It was as if he had the entire China and the entire world resting on his shoulders.

“Is that...is that the God of War? The leader of the six pillars of the nation and the most powerful martial artist in the country? Is that Ye Qing-Tian?”

Ye Yu-Yan was blown away when she finally got a closer look at the man.

She might be a nobody who never had the opportunity to meet or speak to someone like the God of War, but she

had heard of him and seen him from afar.

As a female martial artist, Ye Yu-Yan was well aware of whom the God of War was.

After all, this was the man whom her master, Lu Tian-He, respected and revered the most.

He had a picture of Ye Qing-Tian hung up in his house.

Everything about this man—his features, his aura, even the way he carried himself—was an exact replica of that picture.

This was China's God of War, Ye Qing-Tian!

“Oh my god! I can't believe that the person whom my cousin's been waiting for is the leader of the six pillars of the nation and the most powerful man in China, Ye Qing-Tian!” wailed Ye Yu-Yan privately as her eyes filled with disbelief and shock.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Waves of shock swelled inside Ye Yu-Yan when she saw Ye Qing-Tian.

The God of War had been the central figure in the Chinese martial arts circle and was akin to a god to them all. In fact, he had become a religion.

Ye Yu-Yan was naturally stupefied to see the man in the flesh.

“Fan, why are you still sitting there? The God of War is here. You should...you should go greet him.”

Ye Yu-Yan’s voice was shaking with excitement as she urged Ye Fan to greet the most powerful martial artist in China.

To her bewilderment, her cousin remained unfazed and unmoving no matter what she said.

She couldn’t believe it. The most powerful man in China was standing right before them. How did her cousin manage to remain calm and collected?

Ye Yu-Yan didn’t manage to get Ye Fan to budge. He simply sat there by the lake and waited quietly for Ye Qing-Tian to approach them.

She finally spoke to the God of War in a polite but terrified whisper. “Mr...Mr Ye, greetings. My cousin... welcomes you.”

“Thanks.” The God of War nodded warmly, then smiled lightly as he eyed the young woman before him. “Are you Ye Fan’s sister? Do you have a boyfriend? I could introduce a few young men to you if you don’t. There are plenty of single young men in War God Castle.”

Ye Qing-Tian chatted cordially with Ye Yu-Yan like an

elderly neighbor chatting to the kid of the family next door.

Ye Yu-Yan was overwhelmed by the attention that she was receiving.

She never imagined that she would be graced with the kindness from the most powerful martial artist in China.

“He’s probably doing this because I’m Ye Fan’s cousin,” she thought wryly to herself.

She knew that her capabilities alone would not have won her the attention of the God of War.

The young man before them was the only reason why the most powerful martial artist in China was treating her with such warmth and kindness.

“Thank you...Mr Ye. I’m not interested in dating right now,” she said softly to the God of War and gently turned down his offer.

Ye Qing-Tian shook his head and laughed out loud. “That makes sense. You’ve seen the best, after all. An excellent young man is sitting next to you right now. You’ll find it tough to settle for someone lesser. Ye Fan, it’s your fault if your sister can’t find a boyfriend.”

Ye Qing-Tian’s teasing words had Ye Yu-Yan flushing bright red.

Ye Yu-Yan did not expect the leader of the six pillars of the nation and the God of War to be such a friendly and warm man.

She had thought that the man who stood at the pinnacle of strength and power would hold himself apart from the rest and be a difficult man to get along with.

“Yu-Yan, get a stool for the God of War,” Ye Fan, who had been silent all this while, finally said.

Ye Yu-Yan got a chair for Ye Qing-Tian and brought them both tea before excusing herself.

“It’s fresh Maojian tea from the south. Try it,” said Ye Fan as he picked his teacup up and took a sip.

He seemed unperturbed by Ye Qing-Tian’s unannounced visit.

Ye Qing-Tian seemed surprised. “Aren’t you at least a little surprised by this unannounced visit?”

Ye Fan shook his head.

“It’s hardly unexpected. I knew you were coming. I did kill more than a hundred men in Jiangbei. It would be surprising if War God Castle did nothing. Come on, tell me what you plan to do with me,” Ye Fan said mildly with a faint smile on his lips.

He didn’t seem worried even though he was expecting a punishment. In fact, he seemed utterly unafraid.

Ye Qing-Tian didn’t know what to do with Ye Fan at all.

“I’m going to be frank with you. If the King of Fighters or Sword Saint were here and saw that attitude of yours, they would have meted out a severe punishment even if they were supposed to let you off easy.” Ye Qing-Tian shook his head and smiled.

“They can do whatever they want as long as they think they’re up to it. In fact, they can kill me. I won’t say a single word,” replied Ye Fan mildly.

Ye Qing-Tian was speechless.

Ye Fan's reply had left him at a loss for words.

What arrogance!

In fact, Ye Fan had probably toned down that arrogance of his because he was talking to the God of War. He would have been absolutely obnoxious if it had been someone else whom he had been talking to.

But Ye Qing-Tian knew this was just how Ye Fan was. He had grown used to it.

He wouldn't be Ye Fan without his arrogance.

"Alright, I won't beat around the bush. Don't worry, I'm not here to mete out any punishment. We're still suffering the aftermath from the Jiangbei incident. Nevertheless, the matter has been put to rest. War God Castle will not punish you in any way tangible manner, but we might have to make a gesture to appease the Jiangbei martial arts circle."

"Honestly, you didn't pull your punches at all, did you? I understand why you killed Lv Song-Liang. Without his support and permission, Lv Hua wouldn't have dared to cause trouble in Jiangdong. But I didn't expect you to kill more than a hundred Jiangbei martial artists. The Jiangbei martial arts circle spent more than a month digging up the bodies from the bottom of the West Lake. You didn't even spare the life of War God Castle's ambassador."

"You were utterly merciless. You might as well have spit in our face. I know that the Chinese martial arts circle did you wrong. If we didn't, War God Castle would send the six pillars of the nation to capture you if we have to make you answer for everything that you did."

Ye Qing-Tian grew increasingly agitated as he spoke.

He had been livid when he had found out about the lives that Ye Fan had taken in Jiangbei. He had been ready to take Ye Fan down.

But he had stopped himself.

China was the one who had done Ye Fan wrong in the first place. He understood why Ye Fan had done what he had done.

Ye Fan simply smiled wordlessly as the God of War grumbled.

Perhaps he enjoyed the look of exasperation and annoyance on the God of War's face. He relished the fact that the man was furious at what he had done but couldn't do anything about it.

"I can't believe that you're still smiling. I know that Sword Saint and the others can't hurt you. But did you realize what a great opportunity you missed because of what you did? Without that incident, I could have vouched for you and gotten you admitted to War God Castle. You could have been appointed as a lord in War God Castle like the King of Fighters and Sword Saint. You could have gained true command over the Chinese martial arts circle. But you've ruined it all!" Ye Qing-Tian shook his head. His voice was filled with regret.

Of the young Chinese martial artists, Ye Fan was the one whom he had the greatest regard for. He had pinned his hopes on Ye Fan.

Ye Qing-Tian had been searching for a successor for many years.

Ye Fan was the best candidate.

He had the intention of helping Ye Fan along so that the

young man could rise to the top and hold his own quickly.

Should the day come when Ye Qing-Tian were to perish, the Chinese martial arts circle would still have a pillar supporting it.

But Ye Fan's impulsive actions had thrown a spanner into Ye Qing-Tian's plans.

Ye Fan appeared calm. "I thank the God of War for his good intentions. But I've told you, I'm not interested in joining War God Castle. I'm not interested in a lordship in War God Castle. In fact, I wouldn't be interested even if you were to give me Sword Saint's position. My cause lies elsewhere. You shouldn't trouble yourself with me."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

“What did you just say? Your cause lies elsewhere?” Ye Qing-Tian’s eyes widened when he heard that. “Ye Fan, are you serious? We’re talking about a permanent position as a supreme grandmaster in War God Castle. You will be one of the four most powerful martial artists in China. You will rise to the top of the Chinese martial arts circle and gain control over the entire country’s martial arts circle. This is the greatest honor one could have as a martial artist. Every martial artist’s lifelong dream is to join War God Castle. Yet, you seem not to care about that at all.”

Ye Qing-Tian was incredulous.

He didn’t understand the young man before him at all.

Ye Fan had shown little interest in being made a supreme grandmaster as well.

Back then, Ye Qing-Tian had attributed Ye Fan’s lack of interest to the fact that the title held no formal powers.

But the young man remained completely uninterested even after he had told him that he wanted to recommend him a position in the most powerful organization in the Chinese martial arts circle.

“Ye Fan, why did you enter the martial arts circle and amass so much power? Why, if not for fame, for wealth or for power? Did you truly become a martial artist because of your passion for martial arts? Do you have no other desires?” Ye Qing-Tian’s eyes were filled with puzzlement.

He had not expected Ye Fan’s indifference.

He couldn’t help but be curious. Why had Ye Fan begun training in martial arts?

He wasn't going to believe that Ye Fan had done it for no reason at all.

He must have endured terrible hardships and ordeals to have gotten to where he was today at such a young age.

You had to cut your finger on your instrument before you could master it.

Only those who had survived the torments of hell gained the power to shape paradise.

There was a reason for everything. There must be a reason driving Ye Fan to endure the terrible hardships and ordeals of a martial artist.

Ye Qing-Tian had thought the reason had been fame and power.

But it appeared that he had been wrong.

That wasn't what Ye Fan truly wanted at all.

Ye Fan did not answer Ye Qing-Tian's question.

He simply placed his teacup down, then turned away and gazed at the lake before him. The expression on his face grew solemn. "Do you really want to know?"

"Of course, as long as you're willing to tell me. I'm truly curious. What cause has driven you to such heights?" There was a hint of urgency to Ye Qing-Tian's words. His level-headed composure gave way to a fierce curiosity.

Ye Fan smiled lightly. "I didn't do it for fame or power. I did it because of something that happened to me in the past, because of the shame I suffered then. Those were memories that I never wish to remember. Honestly, I did it because I wanted revenge. For many years, I trained

hard to become stronger so that I could return to the place that brought my mother and me so much shame and suffering. Through my own power, I want to reclaim the dignity that I lost. I want to avenge my mother and right the wrongs that she suffered. I want everyone who looked down on me, who pushed me around and who insulted me to regret their actions.”

The wintry wind sent the snow into a flurried dance.

Countless ripples broke the calm surface of the lake before them.

Ye Fan stood in the wind, his hands folded behind his back and no hint of emotion on his face.

No one knew the sharp and cold edges digging into his heart as he spoke.

Despite so much time that had passed, Ye Fan could still remember everything that had happened that year clearly, as if they were happening again, right before his eyes.

The helplessness and despair that he had felt when his cries for help had gone unanswered and the shame that he had felt when he had suffered the abuse and mockery of others had left scars in Ye Fan’s soul that would never disappear.

Ye Fan did not wish to remember that horrid and dreadful past.

Every time he did, the feeling of fury, shame, despair and helplessness would drive stakes into his heart.

No one knew the scar-ridden heart hiding inside Ye Fan’s seemingly strong and resilient self.

He had to return to Chu Sect. That was his deepest desire and what he truly wanted.

He would not rest until he stormed Chu Sect.

He could not make peace with his past unless he settled his grudge with the Chu family once and for all.

It was this obsession that had pulled him through every time he was caught in the precarious balance between life and death.

“Hate?” Ye Qing-Tian froze when he sensed the violence emanating from Ye Fan.

He had not expected Ye Fan to suffer from such a troubled and painful past. He was such a young man.

But he should have guessed it.

Of the multitudes of things in this world, hate was the strongest motivation that drove one into working hard and becoming stronger.

“You’ve probably gotten your vengeance by now, haven’t you? There are few family clans in China who can hold their own against you. Since you’ve gotten your vengeance, why not set a new goal for yourself? Take on the responsibility of protecting our nation with me,” Ye Qing-Tian said patiently as he tried to counsel the young man before him.

“My vengeance?” Ye Fan barked out a cold and dark laugh. He seemed on the verge of losing control as he raised his voice. “Those who tried to kill me remain alive. Those who insulted my mother continue to enjoy status and wealth. I remain unavenged!”

Ye Qing-Tian attempted to placate Ye Fan.

“Don’t get worked up, Ye Fan. With your status and abilities, you’ll be able to get your revenge easily. If you allow me, I will help you. You are a Chinese supreme grandmaster who’s been bestowed the title of the Unrivalled Grandmaster by War God Castle. As China’s God of War, there’s nothing wrong with me extending aid to a fellow supreme grandmaster. Tell me the names of the people who shamed you and your mother. I’ll bring them to you tomorrow, have them kneel before you and your mother and apologize for what they did to you both. Of course, I’ll only do that if what you just said is true,” said Ye Qing-Tian honestly.

He seemed prepared to help Ye Fan avenge himself.

Ye Fan had killed too many people in China. Further deaths by his hand would incite greater protest and disapproval.

If the God of War were to step in personally and help Ye Fan with his problem, he would be doing Ye Fan a favor and preventing more blood from staining Ye Fan’s hands.

Ye Fan simply shook his head.

“Don’t be a stranger. Just tell me. We’ve known each other for some time. This is just a small favor between friends.”

Ye Qing-Tian thought that Ye Fan had turned down his offer to help because he didn’t want to trouble the God of War.

“That’s not it,” Ye Fan replied. “I’m not being a stranger. You can’t help me with this. This isn’t a group that you can afford to offend.”

Ye Qing-Tian stiffened when he heard that.

“Someone I can’t afford to offend? What nonsense! There’s no one I can’t offend in this country. I would give the King of Fighters, Tang Hao or any of the others a good thrashing if they provoked me. Tell me! Who can’t I afford to offend?” Hints of anger colored Ye Qing-Tian’s voice. This was the first time in years that someone had questioned his abilities and he had blown up instantly.

Ye Fan turned towards him and gave him a look. Then, he smiled. “It’s the Chu family.”

“I see. So, it’s just a small family clan. Tell me, which Chu family is it? Is it the Chu family from Jiangdong or Jiangbei? Perhaps they’re from Yanjing or Zhonghai? Tell me where they live. I’ll storm their residence tonight and bring you the head of the family,” the God of War promised grandly.

Ye Fan replied him succinctly. “It’s the Chu family that makes up one third of Chu Sect.”

...what did he just say?



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

What?

“What did you just say? Chu Sect...it's the Chu family of Chu Sect? Are you telling me that you wish to seek revenge on that Chu family?”

Ye Qing-Tian felt as if he had been struck by lightning. His scalp began to prickle.

He stared at the young man as if he were looking at a ghost.

“Heavens! Are you telling me the truth, Ye Fan? Are you out of your mind? The Chu family is the head of all three families of Chu Sect. Even with China's resources at our full disposal, War God Castle can't guarantee that we have the power to fight the Chu family. But here you are, telling me that your mission in life is to exact revenge on the Chu family? You have no idea who you're up against, do you? Do you know how powerful the Chu family is? Do you know what kind of resources they have at their disposal?”

“No one, no family and no nation within the past millennia has had the power to challenge the Chu Sect. They nearly leveled the international martial arts circle back then. If things had gone according to their plan, the Chinese martial arts circle would be under their jurisdiction right now.” Ye Qing-Tian's face had darkened and his voice filled with fear and anxiety as he spoke to Ye Fan.

Ye Fan was going to give him a heart attack one of these days.

The young man was mad.

He intended to challenge Chu Sect and the Chu family alone.

Chu Sect had once possessed the power to vanquish the entire world.

Ye Fan picking a fight with Chu Sect was akin to picking a fight with the whole world.

“Ye Fan, I think you should calm down and not rush into things. In fact, you should set this plan aside for a while. You’re going to get your family and your entire clan killed alongside with you. The Chu family and Chu Sect aren’t to be trifled with easily. They’re heartless and cruel killers. Provoking Chu Sect will bring you nothing but grief. Please calm down and reconsider your decision,” Ye Qing-Tian urged Ye Fan tirelessly and solemnly.

Ye Fan seemed unmoved by Ye Qing-Tian’s persuasion. It was as if the words that the God of War had just said had left no mark on Ye Fan at all.

“Say something! This isn’t the time to be fishing. This is a serious matter. Have you heard a word of what I just said?” yelled the God of War as he snatched the fishing rod from Ye Fan’s hands. Ye Fan’s composure infuriated him.

Ye Fan smiled and shook his head. “I’ve been planning for this to happen for ten years. Do you think I didn’t think of what you just said? I know better than anyone else how powerful the Chu family and Chu Sect are. I know that even if the martial artists of China were to join forces, they might not be able to defeat the Chu family.”

“But you’re not going to stop, are you?” Ye Qing-Tian asked.

“Does it matter?” Ye Fan shot back. “The Chu family might be immensely powerful, but that doesn’t mean that I shouldn’t attempt to avenge myself. Those are two separate matters.”

“But...”

Ye Qing-Tian was going to continue persuading Ye Fan to change his mind when Ye Fan cut him off.

“You don’t have to try and change my mind. This is the reason I decided to become a martial artist. I’ve lived the last ten years with that single purpose in mind. No one can stop me. I will stop at nothing to get my revenge.”

“What if you don’t survive the attempt?” Ye Qing-Tian asked solemnly.

“Then I won’t.” The resolute tone in Ye Fan’s voice brooked no argument.

The God of War decided to give up on changing Ye Fan’s mind when he heard that.

“I see that your mind is made. So be it. That’s humankind for you. Once your mind is made, you won’t turn back until you get yourself all bloodied and bruised trying to reach your goal. You’re a stubborn man. You remind me of myself when I was younger,” Ye Qing-Tian sighed and shook his head as he recalled memories of his younger days.

Like Ye Fan, he had pursued his goal relentlessly and without any care for the consequences that followed his actions.

But while hate drove Ye Fan, it was love that had driven Ye Qing-Tian.

Few likely knew that the most powerful martial artist in China too had things that he desired but couldn’t have.

“A word of warning, Ye Fan. Neither myself nor the Chinese martial arts circle will provide you any aid

should you declare war with the Chu family and Chu Sect. My position is rather unique. To a certain extent, my actions represent the actions of the Chinese martial arts circle. As for War God Castle, it is charged with the responsibility of protecting our nation and our people. We cannot make enemies of Chu Sect for your sake. I hope you understand," Ye Qing-Tian said earnestly.

Ye Fan nodded.

He understood.

Besides, he had never hoped for help from his nation.

This was his personal grudge and his private business. One might even call it a domestic dispute within the Chu family. He wasn't going to place his hopes on an outsider extending aid to him.

Besides, Ye Qing-Tian had been right. War God Castle couldn't possibly interfere.

It would be akin to declaring war on Chu Sect.

It would be disastrous if Chu Sect were to, in a fit of rage, lead a charge of martial artists into China as an act of revenge.

The God of War wouldn't be able to shoulder the consequences, nor would War God Castle. The entire Chinese martial arts circle wouldn't be able to as well.

"Even though I can't help you deal with the Chu family, I can help you protect your family and friends. You don't have to worry about them when you're gone. Don't worry, I've learned my lesson. I won't let history repeat itself," Ye Qing-Tian said solemnly to Ye Fan as he stared the latter in the eye.

“In that case, I’ll have to trouble the God of War to keep an eye on Jiangdong in the future.” Ye Fan cupped his fists and extended his thanks to the God of War.

That had been the words that Ye Fan had been waiting for all this while.

The journey back to the Chu family was fraught with danger.

Despite Ye Fan’s best efforts, his chances of success remained slim.

That was why he had to make plans for Qiu Mu-Cheng and his mother before he left.

The Invoke the Celestial Sky Formation might be powerful, but the promise from Ye Qing-Tian served to assure Ye Fan further.

“Do you have everything planned? When do you intend to make your move?” Ye Qing-Tian had calmed down. He leaned against the table and sipped at his tea as he asked Ye Fan about his plans.

“Soon. If everything goes according to plan, we’ll move in seven days. Otherwise, we’ll make our move in two weeks.”

The God of War spat out the mouthful of tea that he had just drunk.

“What? You’re planning to storm Chu Sect in a few days? You are truly out of your mind! Do you think this is a game? Shouldn’t you make sure you’re prepared before you send yourself off to be killed?”

The look on Ye Qing-Tian’s face was positively stormy.

He had thought that Ye Fan was going to prepare another few years before he carried out that suicidal plan of his.

He had not expected that Ye Fan would be carrying it out very soon.

He had made peace with the fact that Ye Fan was going to go through with his crazy plan. Nevertheless, the God of War still felt his scalp prickle with numbness when he heard what Ye Fan had said.

“Don’t worry. I’ve got it all planned out. I’ve been planning for more than a decade for this day. You cannot imagine the extent of preparation that I’ve put in. What I would like to know though is how much War God Castle knows about the Chu family. Would the God of War be willing to share that information with me?”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Despite having spent some time in the Chu family, Ye Fan's lowly stature had meant a limited and superficial knowledge of the Chu family.

He had only begun to amass more information about the Chu family after Han had successfully infiltrated the family.

But as an outsider, Han would not have access to highly confidential secrets.

This was why Ye Fan had posed Ye Qing-Tian that question.

After all, China was a great nation of martial arts and had amassed years of knowledge and information. They might know more about Chu Sect than Ye Fan did.

Ye Qing-Tian simply shook his head and said in a grave voice. "The Chinese martial arts circle knows little about the Chu family and Chu Sect. We've amassed countless books and records over the course of five thousand years, but none of those historical records mentioned anything about Chu Sect or the Chu family. Chu Sect seemed to have appeared out of nowhere. When we finally noticed its presence, it had already amassed enough power and resources to dominate the globe. I heard from my master that Chu Sect had originated in China. That means that Chu Sect might have branched off from the Chinese martial arts circle. It developed into a unique and independent sect that then completely dominated the martial arts circle."

The origins of Chu Sect had always been a mystery to the martial arts circle.

The powerful sect had been shrouded in mystery ever since its appearance.

The entire sect seemed to be an enigma.

People were afraid of it, yet at the same time they couldn't help but feel curious and be drawn to Chu Sect.

One could tell from Ye Qing-Tian's tone that he too viewed Chu Sect with deadly seriousness and extreme wariness.

"I just want to know what War God Castle knows about the extent of their true strength." Ye Fan was utterly uninterested in Chu Sect's origins.

What he desperately wished to know now was how powerful the Chu family truly was.

That was the crucial factor that determined whether Operation Sparks failed or succeeded.

The look on Ye Qing-Tian's face turned somber then.

He stared Ye Fan in the eye, then said simply. "They're very strong."

Then, he poured himself another cup of tea and emptied it in one shot. "You should know that at the height of its strength, Chu Sect could thrash every single martial artist in the world. I'm sure you've heard of the Sky Ranking. Chu Sect had occupied the first ten placements in the ranking then."

A long bout of silence descended upon the Ye family home.

One could only hear the hushed whispers of the evening breeze, the sound of leaves drifting in the air, and the words that Ye Qing-Tian had just uttered.

Ye Fan frowned when he heard what Ye Qing-Tian had

said.

Had Chu Sect really occupied the first ten positions in the Sky Ranking?


Chu Sect must have been terrifyingly powerful at the height of its glory and power.

“For the past few years, the names on the Sky Ranking have been constantly changing. Chu Sect seems to be keeping its head down and appears to be facing a decline. They no longer occupy the top ten positions in the ranking. But they remain a fearsome foe. Even though they’re now experiencing a decline in power, their martial artists continue to occupy the first three placements in the Sky Ranking. The Sect Leader of Chu Sect, Tang Yun, has held the first place for many years. Everyone believes that she’s the most powerful supreme grandmaster of our time.”

Ye Fan did not notice the rare hint of gentleness softening the look in the eyes of the man who carried the fate of China on his shoulders when Ye Qing-Tian spoke Tang Yun’s name. Similarly, Ye Qing-Tian did not catch the glimpse of emotion rippling across Ye Fan’s eyes when he heard that name.

“Tang Yun? I know her. Is she really the most powerful person in Chu Sect?” Ye Fan asked coldly.

Ye Qing-Tian fell silent briefly before nodding. “I believe so. There are many in the martial arts circle who believe that the former sect leader of Chu Sect is still alive. But I’ve spent years looking into the matter and have concluded that the chances of the former sect leader being alive are slim. I remember that he was very old when he retired from his position. He was injured during the coup. Since then, Chu Sect had insisted that the old sect leader had gone into seclusion and that Tang Yun



had taken over as the new sect leader. But we have heard nothing from the former sect leader for years. I'm afraid the former sect leader is long dead."

Ye Fan remained silent as Ye Qing-Tian shared his thoughts with the young man. No one had any idea what the young man was currently thinking.

"That is all I know, Ye Fan. My information is mostly about Chu Sect, but the Chu family is the leader of the three family clans in Chu Sect after all. Even if the sect leader chooses not to step in and aid the Chu family, the Chu family remains a terrifying foe. It has terrorized the international martial arts circle in the recent years with its merciless and cruel methods. Don't forget Demon King Chu, a formidable opponent who strikes terror in the hearts of numerous martial artists around the world. Even I would find it a feat to beat him in a fight. In fact, the chances of my success are probably at a low 30%. Demon King Chu alone can hold his own against an army. Think about that, Ye Fan! My advice to you remains the same. Think carefully before you act. Do not be governed by your emotions!" Ye Qing-Tian said solemnly to Ye Fan.

He desperately wished that he could stop the young man before him from doing anything rash, but he knew that he wouldn't be able to unless Ye Fan changed his mind.

"I know. Don't worry. I'll be careful," Ye Fan said.

Done with their conversation, Ye Qing-Tian got ready to leave.

He had made this visit with the intention to persuade Ye Fan to exercise greater restraint so that Ye Qing-Tian might submit another recommendation to War God Castle to grant the young man lordship.

But now that he knew Ye Fan's crazy plan, Ye Qing-Tian had given up completely on getting Ye Fan into War God Castle.

Chu Sect was like a wasp nest.

Ye Qing-Tian didn't want to imagine the consequences that Ye Fan would have to face for poking the wasp nest.

Presently, Ye Fan was not affiliated to War God Castle at all. Even if he were to storm Chu Sect, War God Castle could tell the rest of the world that Ye Fan had acted in his capacity as an individual and that his actions had nothing to do with China.

But if Ye Fan were to join War God Castle, War God Castle wouldn't be able to disavow anything that Ye Fan did.

"China seems to produce nothing but madmen." Ye Qing-Tian sighed.

The late Chu Tian-Fan had been a madman. So was Ye Fan.

Chu Tian-Fan had challenged the Japanese martial arts circle and killed numerous powerful and well-respected Japanese martial artists. His actions had incurred the wrath of Japan and led to his death. He had perished at sea.

Ye Fan was worse. He was going to challenge the Chu family alone.

The Chu family was the most powerful martial arts family clan in the world.

It had Chu Sect's support.

It was numerous times more powerful than the Japanese martial arts circle.

Even an idiot would know that Ye Fan wasn't going to come back from his attempted storming of the Chu family.

"Fine then. I've said my piece. It's your life. You get to decide how you live it. Let me know before you head to the Chu family though. As a friend, I should send you off. That's all I have to say. Farewell!" sighed the God of War before turning away and heading off.

"Hold on!" Ye Fan yelled after him, and then threw a backpack at him.

"What is this?" Ye Qing-Tian eyed the bulging backpack in his hands with puzzlement.

Ye Fan laughed. "Take a look at what's inside."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Curiosity piqued, Ye Qing-Tian pulled the bag open.

He was greeted with eight exquisite-looking wooden boxes.

He picked one up and inspected it.

“There’s something strange about the box. Such well-sealed boxes aren’t commonly seen,” exclaimed the man.

“Stop wasting time and open it,” urged Ye Fan, who clearly wasn’t interested in wasting time on more talk.

Without any hesitation, Ye Qing-Tian tightened his palms around the box slightly.

There was a loud click. Then, the box opened.

The rich smell of vitality escaped the box and hit Ye Qing-Tian in the face.

Ye Qing-Tian trembled as soon as he got a whiff of the natural energies of the heaven and earth. His pupils contracted. “Is this...is this a spirit energy fruit? Did you really manage to get your hands on a spirit energy fruit?”

Ye Qing-Tian trembled as he opened the second and third boxes.

A spirit energy fruit rested in every one of those boxes.

Even though Ye Fan had plucked these fruits nearly a year ago, they remained fresh and continued to brim with spiritual energy.

The rich energies of the natural world rippled in the air. Ye Qing-Tian could see them with his eyes.

“These are all spirit energy fruits. Heavens, how many

fruits did you manage to get, Ye Fan? Why are you still left with so many after so long? How did you manage to preserve them so well?"

Ye Qing-Tian was dumbstruck.

He had not expected Ye Fan to be in possession of so many spirit energy fruits.

He had thought Ye Fan lucky to be able to walk out of the Amazon rainforest alive.

Who would have expected that he had not only returned alive but that he had done with so many spirit energy fruits in tow?

The number of spirit energy fruits that the Chinese teams had gotten over the years couldn't compare with the number of spirit energy fruits that Ye Fan had just given him.

Ye Fan seemed unruffled by how stunned Ye Qing-Tian was.

"Take them all," he said with a casual wave of his hand. "This is my modest contribution to the Chinese martial arts circle. I told you that China is my homeland. Even though I'm not interested in joining War God Castle, I don't mind doing something for the Chinese martial arts circle and for the country."

Having said that, Ye Fan turned and headed back to his room.

He left Ye Qing-Tian standing stupidly in the courtyard.

The words that Ye Fan had just said filled his head.

He stared at the young man's retreating back, then

smiled. "I was right about him."

He realized the growing admiration and regard that he held for the young man.

He might be hotblooded, impulsive and driven by youthful passions, but he was also loyal to his country and homeland.

That was the patriotism that Ye Qing-Tian had wanted to see.

"Ye Fan!" Ye Qing-Tian shouted at Ye Fan. When he spoke next, it was slowly and with great earnestness. "I'll ask you one last time. Can you not storm the Chu family? On behalf of War God Castle and the Chinese martial arts circle, I implore you to give up your desire for revenge. Do it for your country and for the future of the Chinese martial arts circle. Do it for the hundreds of millions of fellow Chinese citizens. This nation needs you. Its future depends on you."

He sounded like a parent trying to persuade his wanderer of a son to cease his roaming and stay.

Ye Fan did not say anything for a very long time.

"Stay, Ye Fan," Ye Qing-Tian urged the young man tirelessly. "Do it for your country. I'm asking on behalf of the 1.4 billion Chinese citizens that you stay. Don't head for the Chu family."

Ye Qing-Tian's voice rang out ceaselessly in the courtyard and drifted out of the mansion and across the lands with the wind.

The world seemed to have fallen silent.

All one could hear was the whispered murmuring of the

gentle breeze and the ripples disturbing the mirrored surface of the lake.

Ye Fan shook his head in the end.

He had his back to the God of War as he laughed softly. "You don't have to use that as an excuse to make me stay. I'm not you. In your eyes, the interest of the Chinese martial arts circle triumphs your personal safety. You would sacrifice everything, including your life, for the country and its interests. Not me. There is something that's even more important than the interest of the nation and that's the one desire that has been driving me for the past ten years. It triumphs everything else. Stop trying to change my mind. I won't stop even if the entire Chinese population begs me to. Honestly, there are probably more Chinese martial artists out there who hate me and prefer that I'm gone."

Without saying another word, Ye Fan returned to his room.

Ye Qing-Tian stood dumbly in the courtyard for a long time before he finally sighed.

The most powerful man in China left with the gifts that Ye Fan had given the Chinese martial arts circle and departed from Jiangdong.

He sent Ye Fan his regards before he left.

They knew that this might be the last time they were going to see each other.

"Yu-Yan, we should head off soon," Ye Fan told Ye Yu-Yan after the God of War was gone and got ready to leave for Yanjing.

He had planned to spend the next few days in Yanjing,

where he would set up another formation in the city to protect the Xu family.

With the primary formation and two secondary formations set up, the Greater Invoke the Celestial Sky Formation would finally be complete.

Upon receiving Ye Fan's instruction, Ye Yu-Yan drove Ye Fan to Jianghai International Airport.

They were going to take a direct flight to Yanjing.

"Stop the car, Yu-Yan," Ye Fan yelled seconds after Ye Yu-Yan had started driving.

The car screeched to a stop as Ye Yu-Yan slammed on the brakes. She thought they were under an attack.

"What's wrong, Fan? Have those men from Jiangbei come seeking revenge?"

Ye Yu-Yan tensed up instantly. Because of the recent spate of incidents, she instinctively thought of the Jiangbei martial arts circle.

Ye Fan didn't say anything as he got out of the car hurriedly.

He stood in front of the car and surveyed the surrounding area. Suspicion lined his wrinkled brow.

"Did I make a mistake?"

He looked around him for a long time. Besides the cars and pedestrians streaming down the streets around him, nothing seemed out of place.

Finally, he shook his head and got back into the car.

They did not make any further unexpected stops and instead sped into the night, eventually disappearing from the streets of Jingzhou.

No one noticed the beautiful woman who appeared outside the gates of the Ye family home and stared into the distance after Ye Fan and Ye Yu-Yan were long gone.

No one knew whom she was, where she had come from and why she was here.

Her eyes glimmered brightly with uncertainty.

While Ye Fan was headed for Yanjing, the King of Fighters had sent his son Mo Wu-Ya to China's neighboring country, Korea, to investigate the sudden appearance of foreign supreme grandmasters.

Korea had been in utter chaos for the past few days.

The most powerful family clans in Korea, the Jeong family and the Choi family, had undergone a catastrophic upheaval.

Within a single night, the upper echelons of their family clans had been massacred.

The businesses under their names had been bought over by other family clans.

The most powerful family in Korea, the Lee family, had gotten a new patriarch too.

Chaos swept across the nation while the lives of the rich and powerful in Korea hung in the balance.

The Lee family mansion was located in Seoul, the capital

city of Korea. Its halls were filled with people presently.

Anyone familiar with the Lee family would recognize the men and women standing in the halls. They were the elders of the Lee family.

These were the men and women who controlled the Lee family's businesses and who had built an empire out of their family business within the borders of their nation.

These powerful men and women appeared cowed as they stared into the distance, where a man and a woman were seated. They were drinking tea leisurely.

“Have you decided? Are you going to choose to remain loyal to the Chu family or to remain alive?”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

floor dark.

“You’re worried about the Chu family coming after you? Well, aren’t you afraid that I’ll kill you right now?” Gaia thundered. “I don’t have time to waste on you. I’m going to kill you now if you don’t change your minds.”

Gaia wasn’t a patient man. He had shown them the greatest extent of his patience by staying his hand for so long.

It had been days since the Dragon God Token had been activated. He had to head to China as soon as possible after he was done with matters here.

“Sir, you’re being unreasonable and uncompassionate. Aren’t you worried that the Chu family will come after you? I am certain that a similarly terrible fate awaits you if you kill us today. The extent of the Chu family’s might is beyond your imagination,” a member of the Lee family shot back at Gaia. It seemed that there were a few gutsy men in the family after all.

“Silence, Bo! You’re being disrespectful to our guest!” yelled an elder of the Lee family in alarm.

But he was too late.

Something came slashing at the young man like a blade.

The sound of skin and flesh being sliced sounded in the hall.

The young man didn’t even get the chance to cry out before he collapsed into a heap on the ground.

Blood spurted violently from his neck and pooled around his corpse.

A teasing voice filled the room.

The man who had spoken was a burly looking man with a white headscarf on his head. He was dressed like a Persian.

If Ye Fan were here right now, he would know whom this man was. He was Gaia, the Persian King.

He had been tasked to get rid of a few of the Chu family's lackeys in Korea before meeting up with Ye Fan in China.

The beautiful woman who had joined him on his mission was the Great Healer Chandra.

She wasn't interested in violence and had been sitting there quietly like an observer.

Gaia was the one who was charged with killing people.

"Are you deaf? I'm asking you a question. Why aren't you answering me?" Gaia glared at them.

A sudden wind stirred in the room.

Alarm flashed across the faces of the Lee family as fear filled their eyes.

"Sir, we...we can't betray the Chu family. You know the power and clout that the Chu family possesses. They won't let us live if we betray them," an elderly man amongst the group said bitterly.

Gaia slammed his fist on the table and broke it into pieces instantly.

The porcelain cups on the table fell and shattered upon impact with the ground while the tea within stained the

The glaring red of fresh blood colored everyone's vision. A deathly silence descended upon the vast hall instantly. Was this what a supreme grandmaster was capable of? He could kill someone as easily as snapping his fingers. Gaia's display of his terrifying prowess shocked everyone present.

The head of the Lee family finally caved to the fear of death and agreed to announce their family clan's split with the Chu family.

"That's great. You should have agreed sooner. What was all that fuss about?" Gaia threw a black card at them as he grumbled.

"This is Hongqi Bank's black card. Transfer the Lee clan's funds to this card. You'll have to seek the Dragon God Hall's permission to use these funds."

What?

"How could you do that? How are we to run our businesses without our cash assets? You're trying to ruin us!" Members of the Lee family protested.

Everyone knew that you needed funding to run a company.

The biggest company would turn into an emptied shell that would cave in on itself as soon as its source of funding was cut off.

Gaia had just demanded to take control of their finances. This was akin to putting a stranglehold on the Lee family.

“Are you saying no? Do you think you have a choice?”

Gaia glared at them. The Lee family gave up on negotiating with Gaia upon hearing the threat in his voice.

“Don’t worry. We’re not going to claim your assets as our own. We’re simply monitoring where your funds are going. The Dragon God Hall won’t interfere as long as the funds are being channeled towards the running of your businesses. Just don’t let us find out that you’re secretly channeling funds to the Chu family. We’ll kill every single one of you if we do!” Gaia said dangerously, his words heavy with the threat of death and violence.

The Lee family kept their heads down and dared not say a word.

Wealth and influence were nothing in the face of pure brute strength. They were but illusions of power that were easily shattered.

Gaia had successfully cowed the Lee family into submitting to the Dragon God Hall. Just as he was ready to leave, he heard loud claps sounding outside the mansion.

It was followed by the sound of laughter.

“The good sir has certainly shown his might by forcing the most powerful family in Korea to submit to his will. I’m humbled and in awe of your feats. But such bullying doesn’t seem to be the way of the martial artist. Aren’t you worried that you’ll be scorned by the rest of the world if news of what you’ve done spreads?”

A handsome young man who had his hands in his pockets strolled leisurely into the hall then.

“Who are you and why are you sticking your nose where it doesn't belong? Are you their reinforcement?” Gaia frowned.

The Lee family was intrigued as well.

The young man smiled. “I don't know the Lee family. I passed by and decided to give my two cents' worth because I thought what was happening here wasn't right.”

Gaia's hand flew at the young man's cheek as soon as the young man's last words left his lips.

The young man had not expected the slap.

Before he realized what was going on, his cheek had swelled up and he had been sent flying into the distance.

“I hate nosy punks like you who act all high and mighty like our Dragon Master even though you don't have the ability or power to back your act up. I'm not going to put up with that obnoxious act of yours!” The Persian King cursed furiously.

In the past, Gaia might not have been so impulsive and would not have started a fight because of some minor unpleasantness.

But he didn't care anymore.

They were going to storm Chu Sect and battle the most powerful sect in the world.

If they weren't afraid to declare war on Chu Sect, then there was nothing else in this world that could terrify them.

He could shove his foot into the ass of god almighty

himself if the latter provoked him.

“How dare you hit me...you scoundrel! Aren't you worried that War God Castle might come after you?” thundered Mo Wu-Ya as he tried to rein in the shame that was flooding his insides. He had his palm cupped against his swollen cheek as he climbed to his feet. He was absolutely livid.

The muscles on Gaia's face twitched instantly.

“Are you from War God Castle? Why didn't you say so earlier? This is a huge misunderstanding. I'm really sorry! My sincerest apologies!” Gaia apologized profusely as he laughed sheepishly. His attitude had completely transformed when he had realized that the young man standing before him was a martial artist from China.

The Lee family trembled with terror at the sight before them.

“China is indeed a powerful nation of martial artists. A single title is enough to frighten that man into apologizing profusely! But the Chu family's influence and might should be greater than that of War God Castle. Why is this man afraid of China when he's unafraid of the Chu family?” The Lee family was filled with both terror and confusion as they stood in the hall.

“I'm glad that you're aware of the might of War God Castle. On account of your sincere apology, I will forgive you for your earlier transgression. But, sir, the trouble that you've been causing at our borders has severely affected the stability and development of the East Asian martial arts circle. As commanded by the King of Fighters and Sword Saint, I've come to seek answers from you. Sir, why are you here? What are your intentions?”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

“The King of Fighters and Sword Saint sent you to demand answers from me?” Gaia burst out into laughter before shaking his head and smiling. He sounded nonchalant when he spoke next. “How old are you, kid? Look at you, trying to intimidate me by dropping names. Well, you’ve picked the wrong ones. If you’d mentioned the Unrivalled instead, I would have left East Asia immediately. As for the other Chinese grandmasters... they don’t frighten me at all. Not even the God of War.”

Gaia wasn’t trying to be arrogant. He was simply stating a fact.

He wasn’t as powerful as the God of War or the other supreme grandmasters like Sword Saint. If he were to run into them, he would probably stay out of their sight instead of provoking them openly.

But they weren’t here right now. Their titles alone would not cow Gaia.

He did not expect Mo Wu-Ya to fly into a rage upon hearing what he had said.

“Silence! How dare you insult my father and his comrades! The Unrivalled? He’s just a country bumpkin who came from the countryside and who has no idea who he’s up against! What was he done to earn the same respect that my father and his comrades command?” Mo Wu-Ya snarled furiously.

Because of the kerfuffle over the title of supreme grandmaster, Mo Wu-Ya had been harboring enmity towards Ye Fan. He felt nothing but hostile condescension for the man.

If his father had not stopped him when Mo Wu-Ya had found out that Ye Fan had returned to China alive, Mo Wu-Ya would have charged to Jiangdong and challenged

the young man to a fight.

He had been dying to find out whether the country bumpkin truly deserved his title as the Unrivalled Grandmaster.

Honestly, Mo Wu-Ya had never thought highly of Ye Fan.

He couldn't believe that he was being subjected to praises of Ye Fan while he was in foreign land and that to this man, Ye Fan somehow warranted more respect than his father, Sword Saint and the other supreme grandmasters.

That infuriated Mo Wu-Ya to no end.

This was an insult to his father, to the lords of War God Castle and to the entire Chinese martial arts circle.

How could the six pillars of nation, supreme grandmasters who had ruled the Chinese martial arts circle for nearly a century, deserve less regard than a lowly hooligan?

"What?"

The temperature in the hall took a sharp plummet as soon as Mo Wu-Ya had spoken.

The look on Gaia's face was cold.

"It seems that you're not friends with the Dragon Master."

Gaia's voice was quiet and his words slightly puzzling to Mo Wu-Ya.

"What Dragon Master? What are you talking about?" Mo Wu-Ya frowned.

“The most powerful supreme grandmaster in your country, also known as the Unrivalled.”

What?

Mo Wu-Ya's eyelids twitched violently.

“What a load of nonsense! That's utter bullshit! The most powerful grandmaster in China is Ye Qing-Tian! Ye Fan is just a shameless punk who stole the title of supreme grandmaster from me while I was down. If I had not been severely injured by Chu Tian-Fan, I would have become the seventh supreme grandmaster in China. He wouldn't have stood any chance at all! He's a shameless scoundrel who took advantage of my injury. Everyone in the Chinese martial arts circle is cursing him and wishing his death and here you are, calling him the most powerful supreme grandmaster in China? Who the hell does he think he is? He's a nobody!” cursed Mo Wu-Ya furiously.

A mixture of jealousy and rage had Mo Wu-Ya trembling violently.

“Forget it! What's the point of telling you all this? You're just an outsider. When I return to China, I'll defeat Ye Fan and you'll know that the so-called Unrivalled Grandmaster is nothing but a piece of trash. All I want to know now is what you're trying to accomplish by killing so many people near our border?”

Mo Wu-Ya pulled himself together after his momentary loss of control.

These were matters that only concerned the Chinese martial arts circle. He didn't have to share them with an outsider.

He raised his head and stared into Gaia's eyes as he

questioned Gaia.

He did not receive a reply from Gaia.

Instead, what he got was a forceful punch.

“What? How dare you!”

A shocked Mo Wu-Ya hurriedly dodged the blow.

But he was barely a supreme grandmaster. There was no way he was a match for Gaia.

A loud thud erupted in the air.

The punch landed squarely on Mo Wu-Ya and sent him shooting into the distance like a cannonball out of a cannon.

He smashed through multiple walls before finally crashing onto the ground heavily and spitting a mouthful of blood on the floor.

“What...what are you trying to do? I have no intention of making an enemy of you. Why do you keep attacking me? Are you trying to challenge the Chinese martial arts circle? If you don't give me an answer today, I'll inform War God Castle when I get back. When that happens, my father, the King of Fighters, and my uncle, Sword Saint, will come after you!” Mo Wu-Ya bellowed at Gaia furiously, his eyes red with anger.

The man had called the first attack a misunderstanding. Was this a misunderstanding as well?

The man had punched him without a single word of explanation. Anyone would be angered by that.

But Gaia paid his threats no heed. Instead, he walked up

to Mo Wu-Ya and began to beat him up.

"I didn't pick a fight with you because I thought you were the Dragon Master's Chinese brethren. How dare you disrespect the Dragon Master, you ignorant punk! I guess I don't have to hold back anymore. I'm going to break your legs for talking about the Dragon Master in this manner!" thundered Gaia.

His furious words were followed by a flurry of blows.

Cries of pain rang out and reverberated across the whole Lee family mansion.

The Lee family was stunned by the sight before them.

Their eyes filled with terror as they stood there stupidly, rooted to their spots.

"That's...quite a beating."

The rumbling of an engine died down as a plane from Jiangdong landed in Daxing Airport in Yanjing.

A young man and a young woman alighted from the plane alongside the rest of the passengers.

They were none other than Ye Fan and Ye Yu-Yan, who had hurried over to Yanjing from Jiangdong.

"Fan, are you sure we shouldn't inform Miss Xu of our arrival? We should at least get her to send someone to pick you up," Ye Yu-Yan asked uncertainly as she looked at Ye Fan.

Ye Fan shook his head and smiled.

“It’s alright. Lei has got her hands full running Yanjing. We can make our way around. There’s no need to trouble her. Besides, I plan to get her some gifts to surprise her before we head to the Xu family. That young girl loves little surprises like that. She’s quite a romantic.”

The image of a beautiful young woman popped up in his head.

It had been some time since Ye Fan had seen Xu Lei.

The last time they had seen each other must have been when he had just returned from Japan.

“It’s been quite some time. I wonder if Lei’s doing alright?” Ye Fan gazed into the distance.

Towering buildings rose into the skies, where the winds roused the clouds.

His phone rang barely moments after he had landed at the airport.

He had just switched his phone. He had gotten it so that he could keep in touch with Han. Few others knew this number.

Ye Fan frowned and answered the call.

“Is this the Dragon Master? I asked Han for your number. I didn’t expect to get through! This is Gaia.” Ye Fan heard Gaia’s politely delighted voice on the other end of the line.

“What’s wrong?” Ye Fan frowned and asked.

“There’s been a small problem. I met a young punk in Korea. I think he’s a Chinese martial artist as well. He spoke disrespectfully about you and insulted your name.

I gave him a good beating. What should I do with him now? Should I just kill him?" asked Gaia.

Ye Fan replied him coolly. "There's no need for that. You have important business to attend to. Don't waste your time on trivial matters like this. If you meet any more Chinese martial artists, don't try to put them in a tough spot unless it's absolutely necessary. As for this man, ask whom his parents are and notify his family so that they can come get him."

"Dragon Master, I've asked him. His dad is the King of Fighters," Gaia said firmly.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

“The King of Fighters?” Ye Fan was slightly startled when he heard what Gaia had said. Then, he shook his head and smiled. “What an unhappy coincidence! Forget it then. Since he’s the son of the King of Fighters, we won’t have to contact his father. I know the man, after all. Why don’t you deliver the King of Fighters’ son to him in a package? The man’s quite old. We should save him the trouble of coming to get his kid.”

Ye Fan laughed softly. He wondered how the King of Fighters would react when he received the package.

“Alright! The Dragon Master really knows how to have fun,” said Gaia as his laughter rumbled loudly on the other end of the line.

Having given his instructions to Gaia, Ye Fan ended the call.

This was simply a small incident of little significance. Ye Fan did not think too much about it. He headed to a nearby mall with Ye Yu-Yan after that with the intention of buying a gift for Xu Lei.

He had no idea that a red folder marked with the label “URGENT” had arrived at Mount Yan the moment he had landed at the airport.

“What did you just say? Ye Fan’s in Yanjing? Again?”

Tang Hao gasped out loud when he heard that Ye Fan had reappeared in Yanjing. Alarm filled his eyes instantly.

Sword Saint had been cleaning his sword leisurely in the halls.

The level-headed and experienced warrior’s hand trembled instinctively when he heard the news as well.

Even Sword Saint was frightened.

Ye Fan was nothing but trouble.

Regardless of where he went, he brought trouble along with him.

Tang Hao and the other supreme grandmasters had gotten scared of the young man.

“What’s Ye Fan doing in Yanjing this time? Hasn’t Lv Hua been put to death? Did that not satisfy him? Is he going to demand that we answer for our negligence? Is he not going to stop until he turns the whole world upside down?”

Tang Hao’s face was filled with bitterness while his words heavy with exasperation and worry.

War God Castle had been put through so much grief because of Ye Fan.

They had only managed to appease the furious crowd and the martial artists of Jiangbei a few days ago.

They had barely enjoyed a few days’ respite before Ye Fan was back again. Why was he back again anyway?

His reappearance naturally sent Tang Hao and the others into a panic.

It didn’t matter why he was here. Nothing good was going to come out of it.

The King of Fighters was reading a book by the window while Tang Hao was complaining. The former suddenly rose to his feet and headed for the door without saying a single word.

"Where are you going?" asked Tang Hao hastily.

"What else? I'm going to kick his ass! That punk's gone too far. Are we going to keep giving in to him?" Mo Gu-Cheng said darkly.

He had been putting up with Ye Fan for far too long. He had held back his impulse to teach the young man a lesson previously for the greater good.

But it had barely been a few days and here was Ye Fan, back in Yanjing trying to stir trouble for them again.

Who could put up with that?

Tang Hao grabbed Mo Gu-Cheng hurriedly when he heard what the latter had said.

"Don't get so worked up. I was just guessing. He might be here for a visit. Why don't you and Sword Saint stay here while I go look for him and find out why he's here? If he's truly here to make further demands, I won't stand by and do nothing. I'll deal with him before you will."

Having appeased the King of Fighters, Tang Hao instructed his men to get the car ready. He also contacted the various agencies in the city to find out where Ye Fan was right now.

Since the Jiangbei incident, War God Castle had designated Ye Fan as a person that warranted close watching.

They had instructed their intelligence agencies to inform them immediately should Ye Fan ever appear in Yanjing.

After Tang Hao left, Sword Saint and the King of Fighters tightened the security around Mount Yan and told the men to cease all activity in the vicinity.

Tension loomed over Mount Yan.

“What’s going on? Are we going to war? Are we anticipating an attack on War God Castle?”

These sudden deployments sent everyone in War God Castle into panic.

This was the first time they had prepared for what appeared to be battle.

The last time Ye Fan had stormed Mount Yan, War God Castle had not mounted any response in time because it had happened unexpectedly and suddenly.

“What about this? Does this look pretty?”

Somewhere in a shopping mall in the center of the city, Ye Yu-Yan had just changed into a dress and walked out of a dressing room.

She was flaunting her lovely figure before Ye Fan.

Ye Fan nodded and smiled. “It looks great. Lei and you share the same size. If it looks good on you, it should look good on Lei too. We’ll have this one then. Miss, please pack this for us.”

After going through the entire store, Ye Fan finally decided on a black dress for Xu Lei.

Ye Yu-Yan had just changed out of the dress when hordes of men swarmed into the mall.

They were dressed in suits and their faces were partially hidden behind sunglasses.

A murderous tension filled the mall as soon as they appeared.

“Cordon off this area. No one is to approach the area without my express permission.” The person in charge of these men ordered.

The staff manning the counters around Ye Fan disappeared within moments.

Ye Fan and Ye Yu-Yan were the only two persons left in the place.

“Who are you? What do you want?”

Ye Yu-Yan appeared slightly cowed by these men who had suddenly appeared and cleared the mall.

But she was the leader of the Green Dragon Force after all. She took no time to step forward and sweep her solemn gaze across the men standing before her.

No one paid her any heed though.

Everyone's eyes were on the young man before them.

“Yu-Yan, step back. You're not their match,” Ye Fan said to Ye Yu-Yan. He seemed to know whom they were. He stared into the eyes of their leader. When he spoke next, his voice was filled with a threatening chill. “What's with all these men, Heavenly Grandmaster? What are you planning to do?”

“I should be asking you that!” Tang Hao blurted out in agitation. He seemed furious and anxious as he yelled at Ye Fan. “What do you want, Ye Fan? What exactly is it that you want? You've killed the Lv family and decimated a good half of the Jiangbei martial arts circle. You got your wish when the martial arts court sentenced Lv Hua

to death. War God Castle has decided not to pursue the matter too. What else do you want? Must you send the whole world into an upheaval? Is that what's going to finally satisfy you?"

Ye Fan was stunned. "I have no idea what you're talking about."

"Stop with that act of yours. Aren't you here in Yanjing to cause more trouble for us? Are you planning to storm Mount Yan and send War God Castle into utter chaos again? Do you have nothing better to do with your time?" Tang Hao said fiercely.

Ye Fan grew increasingly bewildered. "What are you talking about? I'm here to visit my younger sister. I've not caused any trouble for you at all."

"Stop trying to trick me. We've done our background checks. You're the only son. You have no sister. Your only cousin is standing next to you." Tang Hao wasn't convinced at all.

Ye Yu-Yan stepped in then to clear the confusion in the air. "This is a misunderstanding. My cousin Ye Fan is here to visit a dear friend who's like a sister to him. There's no ulterior motive to his visit to Yanjing. Look at this dress. He means to give it to her as a gift."

Tang Hao froze. Ye Yu-Yan didn't look like she was lying. His former fury dissipated slightly. He turned towards Ye Fan again and asked. "Are you really here for a friendly visit and not to cause more trouble?"

Ye Fan rolled his eyes.

He should be more mindful of his words.

Was Ye Fan some kind of terrorist in their eyes? Was he

on some kind of national watchlist?

After Ye Fan explained repeatedly that he was truly here to visit family, Tang Hao finally let loose a long sigh of relief.

It had been a false alarm.

“You’re visiting family! That’s great! Get going then, and leave as soon as you’re done. In fact, try not to come to Yanjing if you can. You’ve succeeded in instilling the fear of Ye Fan in us all. I get nervous whenever I see you now.”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

“Dear cousin, you have my admiration. You’re the center of attention no matter where you are. You’ve made some people lost sleep just by entering Yanjing. China is a vast land and you’re the only person in this country who has the power to do that.”

Tang Hao and the rest had left.

An amused Ye Yu-Yan giggled as she stared at their retreating backs.

Her cousin had just arrived at Yanjing and gone to a mall to get some shopping done. His innocuous shopping trip had made War God Castle nervous.

It was evident that Ye Fan had successfully put the fear of God in those old fellows at War God Castle.

“Stop laughing. This isn’t funny at all,” said Ye Fan in exasperation as he rolled his eyes.

He didn’t enjoy the attention of others. He would rather remain an insignificant nobody than suffer constant watching by other people.

That would save him a world of trouble.

But Ye Fan knew that as he gradually revealed his abilities, he would no longer be able to conceal his presence and go unnoticed by the rest of the world.

The nail that stuck out got hammered down.

When you gained power, you would also lose the freedom to make choices for yourself.

“Alright, we’re done with our business here. Let’s get back to the Xu family. I don’t want anyone on Mount Yan to lose any sleep tonight.” Ye Fan smiled and shook his

head as he stared at the direction where Mount Yan was located.

Ye Fan and Ye Yu-Yan chatted happily as they left the mall and headed to the Xu house.

The young man was greeted by the sight of numerous cars parked outside the gates when he arrived at the Xu family mansion.

“Fan, is there a special occasion today? Why are there so many cars parked outside the gates? Look at their license plates! Quite a few of them were registered outside Yanjing.” Ye Yu-Yan eyed the vehicles’ license plates curiously.

Ye Fan had no clue. He simply shook his head. “Let’s go in and find out.”

The massive hall of the Xu house was filled with people.

They were all old men and women who enjoyed respect in the family.

The man seated at the very front was an old man with a head full of white hair and an intimidating look flashing in his eyes. The rest looked at him with respect and awe.

He was Xu Wen-Qing, the most well-respected elder in the Xu family.

He had met Ye Fan once.

Ye Fan had arrived at the Xu family for the first time, disrupted Xu Mei-Feng’s birthday celebration and forcibly taken Xu Lei away from their house.

skipped her and asked another person for permission to start the meeting instead. What is the meaning of this, I wonder?" questioned Lin Wen-Jing with a frown. She had been seated next to Xu Lei all this while and couldn't stand watching this any longer.

She did not expect Xu Mei-Feng to walk right up to her and give her a slap on the face as soon as she was done talking.

"The Xu family is having a family meeting now. This isn't the place where you can speak freely. Listen, you're just Xu Lei's personal assistant. You're as good as a pet dog! Who gave you the guts to challenge my authority openly?" Xu Mei-Feng's furious voice filled the room while she glared murderously at Lin Wen-Jing.

It was clear to everyone present that while Xu Mei-Feng had just chastised Lin Wen-Jing, the true target of her hostility was Xu Lei, Lin Wen-Jing's boss and the current head of the Xu family.

"You..."

Lin Wen-Jing wasn't the sort to just take things lying down. She was ready to fight for herself after suffering such an insult when Xu Lei stopped her.

"Wen-Jing, leave us," Xu Lei said dispassionately.

"Miss Xu, I can't go. I have to stay and help you. They're out to get you today. This is clearly a trap! Who's going to save you when I'm gone?"

Lin Wen-Jing's eyes were filled with anxiety and her heart with worry.

Xu Lei appeared calm and composed. But you could tell from the eyes of this former goddess of Jiangdong that

Xu Wen-Qing had stepped in to stop him. He had tried to use the status and respect that his age had afforded him to force Ye Fan to give in.

But Ye Fan had cared nothing for his age and status and sent Xu Wen-Qing to his knees with one kick.

It had been a hard kick. Even though some time had passed since that incident, Xu Wen-Qing had not regained his former mobility. In fact, he had a slight limp now.

“Grandpa, the uncles are all gathered. Should we start the family meeting?”

Seated next to Xu Wen-Qing was a man and a woman.

The woman was Xu Lei’s cousin, Xu Mei-Feng.

The man looked unfamiliar and didn’t seem to be part of the Xu family.

But he was well dressed and had an air of sophistication to him. One could tell from his appearance and the way he carried himself that he must too be from a rich family.

Xu Mei-Feng and the young man leaned into the other as they conversed intimately. They behaved as if they were lovers.

Xu Mei-Feng was the one who had asked her grandfather if they should start the family meeting.

She rose to her feet as she smiled and spoke to Xu Wen-Qing.

“Young Mistress, are you speaking to the wrong person? Miss Xu Lei is the head of the Xu family. You should seek her permission to start the meeting instead. But you’ve

she wasn't as happy as she had been. In fact, she appeared frailer.

No one knew how much stress she had shouldered during the past few years as she had tried to keep Ye Fan's businesses running in Yanjing. No one had any idea how much hardship she had had to face alone and obstacles she had had to overcome on her own.

"It's going to be alright. These are my blood kin. They're not going to kill me," Xu Lei comforted Lin Wen-Jing with a soft smile.

"Miss Xu, are you sure you don't need me here?" Lin Wen-Jing was still worried.

Xu Lei nodded. "I'll be fine."

Xu Lei had given the word. There was nothing Lin Wen-Jing could do but leave the meeting hall helplessly.

Before she left, Lin Wen-Jing told Xu Lei that she would be waiting outside and that Xu Lei could call for her if she needed anything.

"Dear sister, you've trained yourself a fine dog indeed. She has no respect for authority at all. She was insolent towards me and showed no respect to our grandfather. You're probably the only person she shows any regard for in this whole family." Xu Mei-Feng sniped cruelly at Xu Lei after Lin Wen-Jing was gone.

Xu Lei ignored her completely.

This wasn't the first time she was subjected to her cousin's caustic remarks. She had long grown used to them.

As long as Xu Mei-Feng didn't cross the line, Xu Lei never

paid her much heed.

“You’ve spent a great deal of effort to gather all our family clan members for this so-called family meeting. There’s no need to beat around the bush. Just tell me what you want. I have other matters to attend to. I don’t have that much time to waste on you,” Xu Lei said frostily.

“It’s barely been a year since we last met. You’re sounding more and more like the head of the family. I’m curious. What part are you playing right now? That of the head of the Xu family or that of the president of the Yanjing Chamber of Commerce? You don’t simply control the finances of the Xu family, you also have the Xue family and the Lin family at your service. Your influence has spread far and wide. Your uncles and aunts, cousins and siblings who are your elders in your family don’t even have the right to any of your time anymore.” Xu Mei-Feng’s words dripped with sarcasm while her voice was heavy with mockery and hostility.

Her words became the spark that ignited a wildfire in the room. Numerous elders had grown increasingly agitated as she had been speaking.

Xu Wen-Qing slammed his fist on the table furiously. “If Chairman Xu is that busy and doesn’t have time for the Xu family, or if she thinks that we’re not worth her time, she can leave. The Xu family can’t afford to keep her around!”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Xu Wen-Qing's angry voice echoed in the room.

This time, even Xu Lei began to look rather upset.

"Granduncle Wen-Qing, I think you've misunderstood me. Regardless of what sort of achievements I've made, the Xu family is still my family. You and my uncles are all my elders. All these years, I've never been rude to any of the elders in the family. How could you say this about me now?" Xu Lei felt aggrieved inside.

For the past few years, she had been working very hard and looking out for the family.

Under her leadership, the Xu family had risen to a high position in society.

Both her line of the family and extended lines of the family saw their year-end bonuses double from the year before.

Xu Lei didn't expect her uncles to praise her or to acknowledge her for anything. She just didn't want them to make any trouble for her.

She never thought that a few provoking words from Xu Mei-Feng was enough to make the eldest person in the family, Xu Wen-Qing, say such things about her.

Even though Xu Lei was a stronghearted woman, she still felt hurt when accused this way by her own family.

"So you do remember that you're a younger member of the family after all. In that case, stand here and listen to the final decision the clan has made about you," said Xu Wen-Qing in a stern voice.

"The final decision the clan has made about me?" Xu Lei was a little puzzled by these words and started to frown.

But Xu Wen-Qing obviously didn't intend to explain anything to Xu Lei. After he said this to her, he took a document from the table and passed it to Xu Mei-Feng. "Mei-Feng, your father isn't around, so you can announce the final decision."

"Sure, Grandpa Wen-Qing," said Xu Mei-Feng happily as she took the document from the old man. Then she cast a gleeful glance at Xu Lei.

That glance was the one a victorious general gave to the defeated soldiers at his feet.

But Xu Mei-Feng just threw her a glance and didn't say anything to her.

After that, she walked over to the highest point of the hall and faced everyone. Her bright and loud voice began the announcement, "Xu Lei, the sinner of the Xu family, was in cahoots with a despicable man who is not from the family. She has used underhanded means to force her uncles to give up positions of power, discriminated against her own family, eliminated anyone against her, oppressed her family and arranged for a large number of people outside the family to take up positions in the family business. This has caused our century old business, our billion dollar empire, to end up in the hands of someone who is not a Xu. These actions by Xu Lei are most certainly rebellious, unfilial, and goes against the wishes of the Xu family ancestors."

"After a discussion among key family members, the Xu family has decided unanimously to strip Xu Lei of all her duties in the family as well as remove her from office. She will also be removed from the family records and chased out of the Xu family. Any assets currently under her name will be taken back by the family."

"As for the position of head of the Xu family, Xu Feng-

Liang will take up this position again. Before he returns to the clan, all matters of the family will be under the charge of Xu Feng-Liang's daughter, Xu Mei-Feng. Once her father returns, she will hand over all authority to him."

Xu Mei-Feng's voice echoed loudly in the room.

The other elders of the Xu family remained quiet and expressionless as they listened to Xu Mei-Feng read the announcement. Their eyes were filled with hostility towards Xu Lei.

It was obvious that everyone here had already reached a common understanding before coming to this meeting.

In other words, Xu Lei had been left out of the real family meeting that was held before this.

When this announcement was made, Xu Lei was too stunned to move.

Her pretty face expressed surprise and shock, but she was more overcome by disappointment and dejection.

Actually, when she saw Xu Mei-Feng earlier, she already knew that this family meeting wasn't going to end well.

But she thought that no matter how much the elders in the family disliked her, they would probably only reprimand her for making mistakes. She didn't expect them to completely remove her from office and even chase her out of the family, going so far as to take her out from the family records.

After a brief period of shock, Xu Lei started smiling.

That was a very sad smile that carried self-deprecation and mocking.

“So all of you have ganged up to force me out of my position? And you’re even chasing me out from the family? So much for treating all of you as my elders and my family. You’ve all turned around to bully a young lady who has lost both her parents. How wonderful. My granduncle and all my uncles are simply wonderful people,” said Xu Lei as she shook her head and laughed bitterly. Her eyes started to redden.

But she continued to hold her head high as she faced them and said, “But I would really like to ask my uncles one question. What wrong have I done? Why does it make you hate and detest me to the point where you want to chase me out of the family? Haven’t I done enough over the last two years?”

“I was the one who has made the Xu family rise in position and return to its former glory. I was the one who multiplied your benefits as well. I have been properly accountable to every person in this family!”

“But I simply cannot understand. I have worked so hard to make this family better, and I’ve worked to give the family a better life. Why do you still oust me from the family like this? Is it just because I don’t have anybody to rely on? Because I don’t have my parents to fall back on? Or because you think that a young woman isn’t worthy of leading the entire clan?”

Xu Lei’s eyes welled up with tears. Her heart was so aggrieved and so disappointed as her words questioned the intentions of the people standing before her.

Was Xu Lei upset about losing her position as the head of the family?

Of course not.

She was just so disappointed in her family, and felt that

she had been unfairly treated.

Why hadn't she received any affirmation despite working so hard?

Why did all her hard work end up benefitting those who didn't do anything to deserve it?

Why did the heavens constantly take away everything wonderful in her life?

She had already lost the parents who doted on her the most, the Fan whom she was infatuated with, and now, even her clan was ganging up against her.

There were times when Xu Lei felt that life was very tiring and terribly lonely.

Her uncles detested her, her cousins ostracized her, and even her beloved Fan whom she relied on, had not come to see her in ages.

Nobody missed her and nobody showed her any concern.

There were so many people on this planet, but Xu Lei often felt like she was all by herself.

"Xu Lei, stop pretending that you're very pitiful. Everybody in Yanjing knows that you're that country bumpkin's mistress. You've discriminated against your own family and supported someone from Jiangdong instead. Isn't that clearly a plan to eventually turn the Xu family business into the Ye family business? That alone makes you unworthy to be the head of this family! There's no way we'll allow you to hand over everything our ancestors have accumulated over the generations to someone who isn't even a Xu!" said Xu Mei-Feng coldly. She had no sympathy for this cousin of hers at all.

Xu Lei got it now. "So you're doing this as an attack on Fan."

"If not? You think it's an attack on you? You're not worth that much. Everyone in the Yanjing corporate world knows that you've reached your current position only because you're his lover. Without his support, you're nothing! You think you could become the head of the Xu family? You think you could be the chairman of the chamber of commerce? You think you could make all those rich and powerful people listen to you?" sneered Xu Mei-Feng as she spat nasty words at her cousin.

Xu Lei didn't get angry when she heard these words.

She didn't mind others thinking that she was Ye Fan's mistress in Yanjing.

As long as she could be associated with that young man, she would feel happy inside.

Even after Xu Mei-Feng had mocked her, Xu Lei still replied her with a smile, "Since you know what my Fan is capable of, then you should know that this supposed final decision by the clan will not affect my position in Yanjing's corporate circle. The rich and powerful of Yanjing only acknowledge Fan as their leader, and I am his representative in Yanjing, so they will only listen to me."

"So what if you become the head of the Xu family? That's just a title that doesn't wield any power. You will not be able to have any authority to control the assets that the Xu family has in Yanjing, and there will be no way you could control anybody else in Yanjing either."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

After all these years, Xu Lei had ensured a firm grip over everything that belonged to the Xu family.

She had brought over people from Jiangdong to take up core positions in the family business.

So even if her entire clan ganged up to oust her from her position as head of the family, this would not affect her authority in the family business.

Besides, the corporate circle of Yanjing looked up to Mr Chu.

Back then, Ye Fan had proved his might at Yanqi Lake, and made all the rich and powerful bow to him.

In short, as long as Ye Fan was still around, nobody could possibly shift Xu Lei from her position.

But after Xu Lei said these things, Xu Mei-Feng chortled.

“Xu Lei, Xu Lei, you’re still as proud and confident as you used to be. But did you think that you were the only one who could rely on a man to get to where you are now? Did you think you were the only one who could find someone powerful, while I can’t?”

“Sure, you’re right. Even if we oust you from being the head of the family, as long as that hooligan is still considered the leader of Yanjing, there’s nothing we can do about you. But what if there’s someone who can replace Ye Fan’s position over Yanjing?” said Xu Mei-Feng smugly with a hint of mocking in her voice.

Xu Lei frowned immediately. “What do you mean?”

Xu Mei-Feng didn’t respond to her question.

Instead, it was a young man who had remained silent all

this while who stood up. He smiled as he looked at Xu Lei. “Miss Xu, there’s no point in asking all of this now. My Mei-Feng has to discuss important matters with the rest of the elders in the family in a short while. So you’d better hand over the clan ring and pass it to Mei-Feng for safekeeping.”

He stretched his hand out towards Xu Lei and waited for her to remove the clan ring on her hand.

That ring was worn only by the head of the Xu family, and it was a tradition passed down through many generations.

Now that Xu Lei was no longer the head of the family, she was no longer qualified to wear this ring.

“Miss Xu, please hand the ring over and stop wasting everyone’s time, will you?” hurried the young man in a suit when he saw that Xu Lei wasn’t going to hand it over.

“Who are you? How dare you poke your nose into the Xu family’s affairs?” Xu Lei glared at him and reprimanded him fiercely.

“Outrageous! How dare a sinner like you behave so rudely towards Young Master Luo? Did you think you could do anything you wanted just because you’re the chairman of the chamber of commerce? Young Master Luo’s background and prestige is higher than yours and that country bumpkin’s put together. If he can’t poke his nose into our affairs, then you’re not even worthy to carry his shoes!” Xu Wen-Qing shouted at Xu Lei angrily after slamming the table.

“Hoho, Grandpa Wen-Qing, don’t get angry. I’m not offended, so you don’t have to be so worked up. Don’t ruin your health over someone like this. Also, don’t call me Young Master Luo or Young Master Wei anymore,

you can just call me Luo. I've come to Yanjing this time partly to confirm my engagement with Mei-Feng. We're going to be family soon, so you really don't have to be so formal with me," said Wei Luo with a friendly smile. His words made the old man extremely happy.

"That's wonderful! Simply wonderful! All of us elders are truly happy that Mei-Feng can marry you. Young Master Luo, you're from a very powerful family, excellent upbringing, and you are a really talented young man. Having a son-in-law like you is the honor of the Xu family."

"This situation is so unlike some women who don't even know how to behave themselves, and would rather be a lover to a country bumpkin of lowly birth. The Xu family has really been disgraced by her!" said Xu Wen-Qing coldly as he sarcastically avoided naming names.

"That's enough!" Xu Lei suddenly lost her cool and became angry.

Her gaze was frosty as she stared straight at Xu Wen-Qing. "Granduncle Wen-Qing, you can insult me all you want since you're my elder, and I will not complain. But please, do not insult my Fan."

"Oh my, how touching. Your Fan? That hooligan is so precious to you that we can't even talk about him? You treat him as treasure, but how does he treat you? He probably thinks you're just some wild grass he can do without, right? It's amazing that you're still so loyal despite being a mistress."

"Tsk, I can't be bothered to waste my saliva on you. Hurry up and hand over the clan ring that belongs to my father now. Don't force me to snatch it from you," snapped Xu Mei-Feng icily as she stared back at Xu Lei with disgust in her eyes.

Once she finished saying these words, she lost all patience and marched over to Xu Lei, grabbing her hand and attempted to pull the ring off.

“Ouch! That hurts!” Xu Lei winced in pain from how hard Xu Mei-Feng tugged at her fingers.

She pushed Xu Mei-Feng away from her in the struggle.

Xu Mei-Feng stumbled a few steps backwards and fell right on her butt.

“Ow! That hurts! You despicable woman! How dare you push me?!” yelled Xu Mei-Feng angrily through her pain.

Wei Luo ran over and quickly consoled her, “Feng, are you alright?”

“Luo, this woman bullied me! You have to avenge me!” wailed Xu Mei-Feng in a choked voice.

Wei Luo comforted her, “Of course, of course, don’t worry, I won’t let you get bullied for nothing.”

He then got up with a start and walked towards Xu Lei.

His handsome face no longer looked elegant, but looked frosty and furious instead.

“Miss Xu, why make life so difficult for yourself? Do you really have to make things so ugly? If you backed off quietly, I would not have made things hard for a woman like you. But now that you’ve attacked Feng, how could I possibly let you off? If you know what’s good for you, kneel down and apologize to her, then give her the ring with both hands. Otherwise, I’m going to make sure you end up crawling out of this house!” Wei Luo was a really extreme one. Xu Mei-Feng had barely suffered any pain, but he wanted Xu Lei to kneel down and apologize.

The rest of the Xu family remained silent and watched on coldly, as if everything happening in front of them had nothing to do with them.

So many of Xu Lei's family members stood in the huge hall, but not a single one stood up for her.

For some reason, Xu Lei's eyes instantly reddened and she felt like crying when Wei Luo stood up for Xu Mei-Feng.

She wasn't feeling threatened or scared of him. She just felt really lonely and helpless.

She even started to envy Xu Mei-Feng.

She envied her for having someone to stand up for her and shield her from harm every time she got hurt.

Whereas Xu Lei always faced everything by her lonesome self.

She really wished she had a young man beside her to protect her like how Wei Luo protected Xu Mei-Feng.

"Hmm? Looks like you're not going to listen to me even though I've tried to be polite. In that case, don't blame me for getting nasty!" Wei Luo flew into a rage when he saw that Xu Lei wasn't budging.

His expression was icy as he stepped forward and raised a hand to slap Xu Lei.

If she wasn't going to apologize, he was going to beat her until she did.

There was no way he would allow his woman to be humiliated by others.

Xu Lei just shut her eyes and stood there as she waited for the slap to strike her.

There was no point in fighting back anyway.

Even if she tried, she would probably still be unable to avoid getting hit.

But just when Xu Lei had decided to stand there and be slapped, the door of the room was pushed open from outside and light streamed in.

A valiant and authoritative voice rumbled like thunder, shaking up the entire Xu family estate, "And who dares to hit my younger sister?"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Those words resonated like thunder.

His voice shook the entire estate.

Everyone was shocked.

They all turned to look with terror in their eyes.

The door to the house was wide open.

Sunlight poured in from outside like a river.

The shadow of a young man stood in the sunshine.

For some reason, despite being so skinny, this shadow seemed as wide and authoritative as a mountain.

"It's...it's you!" Xu Wen-Qing nearly leapt up from his chair in fright when he saw that Ye Fan was here.

Even though he had only met Ye Fan once and never saw him again, the impression that Ye Fan left on the old man was very deep.

This was the same young man who had broken his knee caps with one kick and forced him to kneel after all.

Xu Wen-Qing was never going to forget the humiliation he suffered that day for the rest of his life.

So when Ye Fan suddenly appeared again after so long, everyone in the Xu family was terrified.

But the one who was most worked up had to be Xu Lei.

She became especially emotional when he heard him stand up for her as her older brother.

All of a sudden, Xu Lei felt that all the pressure and

unfairness she suffered over the years was worth it.

“Fan!” After a short period of surprise, Xu Lei couldn't hold her emotions back anymore.

Her eyes were filled with tears and reddened as she ran with all her might towards the young man.

This queen of Yanjing who had control over the business circle of Yanjing eventually disregarded whatever image she had and lunged right into Ye Fan's embrace in front of everyone else.

“Fan, why haven't you come to see me in so long...I tried calling you but couldn't get through, I went to Jiangdong to look for you but couldn't get to see you. I asked Auntie Mei where you were and she wouldn't tell me...I thought you had forgotten me, I thought you were avoiding me, I thought you didn't want me anymore...” Xu Lei sobbed miserably in his arms.

Tears streamed down her face like the rain, and she looked like a child who had lost her favorite toy.

Everyone in the Xu family was shocked to see her like this.

Xu Lei was normally so stern and authoritative.

She was firm and resolute regardless of whether she was handling her own family business or the Yanjing corporates.

She was both classy and commanded respect, like a general of a great army.

Nobody would have expected this usually aloof and mighty careerwoman to become so gentle and frail in front of Ye Fan.

She was as frail as a little girl who couldn't find her mother in the mall.

This steel pole had melted immediately upon seeing Ye Fan.

The immense difference made it difficult for some to accept.

"Is that...is that the Miss Xu we know? The head of the Xu family?"

"That's...that's seriously the chairman of the Yanjing chamber of commerce?"

Many of them were whispering among themselves as their eyes twitched at this.

Even Ye Yu-Yan felt her emotions stir and become complicated as she stood outside the door.

She knew that Xu Lei was on very good terms with her cousin, but she never knew that they were this close to each other.

In her memory, Ye Fan had been so intimate with only two women.

One was his wife, Qiu Mu-Cheng.

The other was this Miss Xu.

Both of them were so outstanding and so pretty, they made Ye Yu-Yan ashamed of herself.

She started to envy Xu Lei.

She was considered a younger sister to Ye Fan too.

She was Ye Fan's actual family after all.

But she knew that her place in Ye Fan's heart was nowhere near Xu Lei's.

"Miss Xu Lei, I'm really so, very envious of you," murmured Ye Yu-Yan outside the door as she quietly looked at them with a faint smile.

"Alright, alright, don't cry anymore. You're already so ugly to begin with, so crying is only going to make it worse," said Ye Fan with a laugh as he wiped Xu Lei's tears away once Xu Lei was done with her outburst.

But Xu Lei was still angry. After all, Ye Fan hadn't come to visit her in so long, and hadn't even called.

After Xu Lei and Ye Fan were reunited, she had already treated him as her only family in the world.

So when she lost all contact with him, she became really depressed and felt like the world had abandoned her.

For a long period of time, Xu Lei would go to Jiangdong every now and then.

She would look Qiu Mu-Cheng and Ye Xi-Mei up, and tried to talk to anybody who had connections to Ye Fan.

But nobody could tell her where Ye Fan had gone.

Not even his mother could.

The last time she went to Jiangdong, she realized that she couldn't even find Qiu Mu-Cheng or Ye Xi-Mei.

Mount Yunding Villa was completely empty.

In that moment, her heart nearly shattered.

She thought that Ye Fan was avoiding her and didn't want to see her.

After all, her existence was always a threat to his marriage.

She had been restraining herself and keeping her distance from Ye Fan, since he was already married and she ought to avoid any misunderstanding. But even so, Yanjing still treated her as Ye Fan's mistress.

So Xu Lei thought that Ye Fan had deliberately cut off contact with her to distance himself and cut ties with her in order to prevent any misunderstanding.

Once she thought about it this way, she stopped looking for Ye Fan in Jiangdong.

She didn't want to create any problems for his marriage, and didn't want him to be upset with her.

She even thought that she might never see him again.

Nobody knew how hard this period of time had been for Xu Lei.

Her heart felt like broken shards of glass that had been glued together, and would fall apart at the slightest knock.

But Ye Fan just gently rapped on her head after hearing her grumbles. "You silly girl, what are you even talking about? You're the younger sister I dote on the most. Even if I had to give up the world, I'd still care about you. I've been busy recently and was held back by some matters, so I really wasn't able to come and look for you," Ye Fan gently comforted her.

The martial arts world and the mundane world were

poles apart.

During this period of time, the international martial arts world had been in turmoil, but only the small population of martial artists knew anything about it.

People like Xu Lei who only came into contact with non-martial artists, would never know anything about the martial arts world.

At the same time, Ye Fan didn't want to tell them about it either.

The martial arts world was bloody and cruel, so it was enough for him to carry these burdens himself.

Regardless of whether it was his mother, Qiu Mu-Cheng or Xu Lei, Ye Fan wasn't going to let them come into contact with the martial arts world at all.

He was going to shelter the people he cherished the most.

He was going to help them to block off any winds and rains that came their way.

"So, you're Ye Fan? Xu Lei's pillar of support? The seemingly legendary Mr Chu among the people of Yanjing?" asked Wei Luo in surprise from behind while Ye Fan and Xu Lei were still catching up.

He had heard about Ye Fan from Xu Mei-Feng a long time ago.

This man was from the countryside and had learnt martial arts by himself, but shocked everyone during a battle at Yanqi Lake.

He had defeated everyone else and trampled upon all the

rich and powerful of Yanjing.

He had even forced Xu Mei-Feng's father to step down from his position and hand over the reins of the Xu family.

This man had unified all the powers of Yanjing.

Wei Luo thought that the person who could do this must be some middle aged man at the very least.

Ye Fan was way younger than Wei Luo had expected.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

But Ye Fan behaved like he hadn't heard a single thing that Wei Luo had said. He didn't even give him any attention.

He just continued to console Xu Lei with a smile. "Alright now, Lei, don't cry anymore. Your Fan was wrong, okay? I'll apologize to you? Look, I've bought you some clothes as my way of saying sorry. Besides Mu-Cheng, you're the only other girl whom I've selected and bought clothes for, you know?"

Ye Fan gently scratched Xu Lei's cute little nose, then called Ye Yu-Yan to bring the clothes he had bought.

Since he had apologized so sincerely, Xu Lei wasn't angry anymore.

Ye Fan was really good at coaxing ladies.

It hadn't taken much to turn the tears of the queen of Yanjing into smiles.

Her pretty eyes that once held tears, were now filled with joy and excitement.

"At least you've got a conscience," said Xu Lei with a pout.

But while the two of them were chatting away happily, Wei Luo was so angry that his expression had darkened.

Had Ye Fan treated his words earlier as merely fart?

Ye Fan hadn't even bothered to look at him.

What was he to Ye Fan? Air?

"Punk, I'm talking to you! Are you deaf? Didn't you hear what I said?" Wei Luo glared at Ye Fan coldly as he

gnashed his teeth.

But still nobody paid him any attention.

Ye Fan didn't even look at him.

Then again, there were very few in all of Yanjing who was worth any attention from Ye Fan, never mind one tiny Wei Luo.

Perhaps Ye Qing-Tian was counted as one of them.

The only other person was Xu Lei.

She was the only one he cared about in this city.

If Xu Lei weren't here, he probably wouldn't have set foot into Yanjing again.

"How is it? Do you like it? I remember you like black, so I purposely picked a black dress. I'm sure you'd look prettier than everyone else in this dress." Ye Fan took the dress out for Xu Lei to look at.

Xu Lei liked it, of course.

She never thought that Fan would remember what she liked.

It seemed like she did occupy a position in his heart after all.

"What the hell?! You're really going to just pretend I don't bloody exist?!" Wei Luo couldn't stand it anymore and the rage in his heart exploded.

He had never been ignored like this all his life.

In his anger, he kicked the table in front of him as he

yelled at Ye Fan and Xu Lei with a nasty look on his face.

Everything on the table shattered to the floor.

The water in the teapot stained the skirt of the dress that Ye Fan had bought for Xu Lei.

Ye Fan's expression immediately turned cold.

Before Ye Fan said anything, Xu Mei-Feng got angry first and started screaming at Ye Fan on Wei Luo's behalf, "Exactly! You're just a country bumpkin, so how dare you put on any airs! Just because you've got a lot of brute strength, you think you're the emperor? You ought to feel honored that Luo is even talking to you! How dare you throw your weight about! How dare you pretend that you're above him! How dare you even pretend to be anything! There's no way you can hide the lowly bum you really are!"

Even though Xu Mei-Feng was shrilly shouting such harsh and ugly words, Ye Fan ignored her. His eyes fell upon Wei Luo.

"We're in Lei's house, so I don't want to make things hard for you. Come here and clean the tea off, then apologize to Lei. Then I won't hold it against you for dirtying Lei's new dress," said Ye Fan frostily with no expression on his face.

"What?" Wei Luo burst out laughing at this. He stared back at Ye Fan with a mocking look in his eyes.

"Mr Chu, you think you're very powerful huh. You want me to apologize? Not even the mayor of Yanjing dares to tell me such a thing. Your mistress pushed my fiancée and hasn't answered for it. Tell you what, since she's your woman, you can atone for her mistakes. Go over there and kowtow to Feng and apologize," said Wei Luo in an

arrogant manner.

He folded his arms and just smiled coldly.

The rest of the Xu family looked on gleefully like they were waiting to watch a good show. They were eager to watch how Wei Luo was going to humble Ye Fan.

But Ye Yu-Yan shook her head. "One might pity you if a natural disaster befell you. But if you bring disaster upon yourself, then you have only yourself to blame..."

She murmured to herself as she looked pitifully at Wei Luo.

As she had expected, Ye Fan's expression was icy cold now.

There was even a murderous glint in his eyes.

"You're playing with fire now," said Ye Fan icily.

"Oh my, how frightening, I'm so scared! Oh great Mr Chu, don't stoop to my level! Haha!" Wei Luo laughed merrily as he spoke in a mocking voice.

Once he was done laughing, he continued, "Mr Chu, I'd advise you to keep away your arrogance in front of me. You have no idea who I am at all. But even though you don't know who I am, I know who you are. I know your background, I know how you made it big, and I know how you've controlled Yanjing. I know everything about you."

"You're able to control all of Yanjing now merely because you have brute strength. You've relied on people like Xu Lei, Xue Ren-Yang and Wei Lin to work loyally for you. But in no time, all these things that you have will cease to exist. The Wei family of Zhonghai will merge with the Xu family to take over all the authority and power you have

in Yanjing.”

Wei Luo smiled uninhibitedly. His words were filled with confidence, as if he had already won.

Ye Fan began to take some interest at this point.

He thought that Wei Luo had made life difficult for Xu Lei because he was standing up for Xu Mei-Feng.

But it turned out that he had underestimated this Wei Luo. Wei Luo had his eye on all of Yanjing.

Ye Fan chuckled. “Is that so? You sound very confident. I’m very interested to know what you’re going to use to replace me.”

“Of course I’m confident!” said Wei Luo arrogantly. “Even though I don’t have the brute strength you possess, the Wei family has countless fighters working for us. You’ve managed to secure people like Xue Ren-Yang and Wei Lin only because you’ve promised them money and other benefits. I can offer them even more than you have. This morning, my men have gone to visit both families to offer our best to the heads of their families, and I believe we’ve reached an agreement already by now.”

“I’ve removed your arms and legs in Yanjing already, and now Xu Lei has lost her position as the head of the Xu family. Everything you relied on to control Yanjing has been fully dismantled by me. From now on, this place shall no longer belong to you, Ye Fan.”

But when Xu Lei heard these words, her expression changed. “You’re from the Wei family of Zhonghai? You’re from the most powerful family in Zhonghai?” exclaimed Xu Lei with a grim look in her eyes.

“Looks like Miss Xu is more knowledgeable, unlike some

country bumpkin we know who has never seen the world, and probably has no idea who the Wei family of Zhonghai is," said Wei Luo as he shook his head and laughed.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Wei Luo was very satisfied with Xu Lei's reaction.

If Ye Fan and Xu Lei didn't know how powerful the Wei family of Zhonghai was, then it would be meaningless for him to act like a big shot.

But he had been worried for nothing after all.

"During this time, the Xu family business has been running into problems again and again, across all industries. Billions of dollars' worth of goods have been stuck at the Zhonghai ports. So if my guess is right, your family's the one who's behind all of this, right?" Xu Lei continued to ask as she frowned.

Now that this Wei Luo turned out to be from a powerful family in Zhonghai, everything that happened before this made sense to Xu Lei.

It was no wonder that so many families in Yanjing had suddenly started distancing themselves from her.

And it was also no wonder that many of her expansion plans had run into issues.

The most pertinent of all was the fact that the goods that Xu Lei had ordered from overseas got stuck at Zhonghai by the authorities, and they still hadn't been released yet.

At that time, Xu Lei was under the impression that she had missed some paperwork, so she had run around trying to settle this matter for a long time.

But everything was clear now.

Missing paperwork was merely an excuse.

The real reason was that the Wei family was the one

holding up the goods.

Wei Luo merely smiled at Xu Lei's questioning. "Miss Xu, you are indeed a lot more intelligent than others. Without any hints from me, you put two and two together so quickly. That's right, Miss Xu. All the issues you've run into lately are all my doing. But that's just an appetizer for you. The good show has only just started. Next, I'm going to let all of you witness the birth of a new king in Yanjing."

Wei Luo made this declaration with great arrogance and confidence. He even looked disdainfully at Xu Lei and Ye Fan.

He was like a king looking down at ants.

If someone else said these words, Xu Lei might have just scoffed and felt that the other party was spouting nonsense.

But because these words were said by Wei Luo, Xu Lei did not think he was kidding.

Her eyes were filled with solemnness and grimness.

"Miss Xu, is the Wei family of Zhonghai very powerful? Are they even more powerful than the Xu family in Yanjing?" Ye Yu-Yan couldn't help but ask Xu Lei when she saw that Xu Lei had paled. She couldn't help but feel a little curious and worried.

Even though Ye Fan was considered one of the most powerful people in China, there were still some people he couldn't afford to offend, like Sword Saint and the God of War, since they were the leaders of the martial arts circle.

But of course, besides the martial arts world, there were

some really powerful figures who controlled a lot of areas in the mundane world whom Ye Fan could not afford to simply ruffle their feathers.

Xu Lei nodded in response. “No matter how powerful the Xu family is, the best we managed was to become fourth place among the four great families of Yanjing. There were other families like the Mo family and Xur family, who have great military and martial arts backing. In any case, the four families had to essentially share Yanjing.”

“But the Wei family is different. Zhonghai is so huge, but the Wei family controls the whole place by themselves. They are the leader of the entire region. They have connections and people in every single aspect of Zhonghai.”

“The person I talked to about my goods getting stuck in Zhonghai was also connected to the Wei family. No wonder nothing moved. The people who were targeting my family turned out to be the Wei family themselves,” said Xu Lei in a grim voice. There was worry written in her eyes.

At her position, there were very few factions of power that Xu Lei was wary of within the country.

However, the Wei family of Zhonghai was exactly one of those few factions of power.

Zhonghai was the most prosperous region of China.

One family had managed to gain control over the entire region and make everyone else bow to them. It wasn't hard to imagine how powerful this Wei family was.

In all of China, the only ones who could possibly fight the Wei family would probably be families like the Lu, Xur and Mo families who were descendants of true blue

aristocratic families.

The Xu family had become a powerful family only because they had made a lot of money.

Unfortunately for them, money and physical assets were nothing in the eyes of the truly powerful.

That was also why the Xu family lost to the other families in terms of prestige and power within Yanjing.

CLAP CLAP!

After Xu Lei finished explaining all this to Ye Yu-Yan, Wei Luo started applauding.

“I knew it. The ones who know you the best are your rivals. Looks like this old saying is true. Miss Xu, I suppose you’ve researched hard on the Wei family before this. But that sounds about right. Our families have clashed a few times over the past two years, haven’t we? I remember you tried to expand your business into Zhonghai two years ago, and my family blocked your move,” Wei Luo smiled faintly.

Xu Lei frowned even more deeply.

Wei Luo was right about that.

She had been trying very hard to expand her business over the past two years.

Yanjing’s economy was not doing as well as Zhonghai’s, so Xu Lei put in a lot of effort to open a branch in Zhonghai so that she could enter its market.

But her plans were stopped very quickly by the Wei family.

She had tried to fight the Wei family then, but of course, she had failed miserably. She even had to give up her expansion plans, and agreed with the Wei family that neither side would attempt to expand into each other's territory from then on.

Because of that, Xu Lei's Zhonghai expansion plan was shelved, and the billions she had invested went down the drain.

"Since you've brought this up, I want to ask you then – I made an agreement with the head of your family to never cross each other's paths again. Why didn't you keep to it? I didn't attempt any expansion into Zhonghai, so why are you making trouble in Yanjing?" Xu Lei questioned him coldly.

Wei Luo laughed. "Miss Xu, don't you think you sound very silly? That's an agreement between the heads of both families. But you're no longer the head of the Xu family. If anybody wants to challenge me on that agreement, then Feng should be the one raising this question. You're not qualified to do so."

"Alright, I've said everything I've supposed to, so let's cut the crap. You've been chased out of the Xu family and I can let you go out in one good piece. But first, you must kneel before Feng and apologize. If you don't do that, then you, and that little lover boy of yours, aren't going anywhere today," said Wei Luo in a commanding voice as he sneered at her.

Xu Lei fell silent.

After hesitating for a long time, she finally looked up and said in a low voice, "Fine. I can apologize to Xu Mei-Feng, and I can give up the position of being head of the Xu family. But my only condition is that you do not touch the Xue family."

Ye Fan relied on herself and Xue Ren-Yang to control Yanjing.

She had fallen from grace, so if the Xue family was dragged down with her as a result, everything that Ye Fan had built in Yanjing would vanish.

She didn't want everything that Ye Fan had built and schemed for so many years to go down the drain because of her.

But Wei Luo shook his head at her request. "Miss Xu, wake up and look at the situation you're in. You're not in a position to negotiate with me now. Hurry up, my Feng has been waiting for a very long time now. Call that lover boy of yours along to kneel down and apologize to Feng now. Save yourselves some dignity if you can, don't make me get my subordinates to force you to kneel."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

“Why, you...” Xu Lei’s face paled and she trembled from being too angry.

She didn’t expect Wei Luo to be this ruthless.

It was clear that he wasn’t just going to make things difficult for herself, but also difficult for Ye Fan.

She wanted to say more, but Ye Fan stopped her.

“Lei, stand back. Leave the rest to me,” said Ye Fan in a low voice. His words sounded a lot colder than before.

Xu Lei knew Ye Fan’s personality well and knew what he was going to do, so in her worry, she quickly said, “Fan, don’t be rash! Wei Luo is from the Wei family in Zhonghai, they...”

Before Xu Lei could finish speaking, Ye Yu-Yan walked over and pulled Xu Lei back. “Lei, you don’t have to worry. My cousin is very formidable, so we just have to stand back and watch. It’s just one Wei family from Zhonghai after all. Have you forgotten how all the rich and powerful of Yanjing weren’t able to do anything about Fan either?” Ye Yu-Yan smiled as she assured Xu Lei.

Some of Xu Lei’s worries dissipated after hearing these words.

It was true that even the combined forces of the Lu and Xur families hadn’t been able to topple Ye Fan.

Even if this Wei family was more powerful than the Lu and Xur families, they couldn’t be that powerful either.

With that in mind, Xu Lei didn’t stop Ye Fan. But she left him with a piece of advice, “Fan, it’s easy to make enemies but difficult to resolve enmity. You already have a lot of enemies in this country, so if you don’t have to

offend the Wei family, then it's better not to."

Xu Lei had other worries.

After all, one could crush a camel to death with sufficient hay.

Even though she knew that Ye Fan was no ordinary person, he had a lot of enemies. So if they all decided to join hands, she was worried that he might be in danger.

"Got it, Lei. Don't worry, I won't do anything out of line. I'll try my best to end this matter in a proper manner." Ye Fan smiled when he heard Xu Lei's concerns.

His smile was warm and friendly, and looked completely harmless.

After Ye Fan promised her, Xu Lei was much more assured, so she walked with Ye Yu-Yan to the back.

Ye Fan then walked over to where Wei Luo was, looked at him and smiled. "So, you said you wanted me to kneel and apologize?"

Wei Luo immediately laughed. "Haha! You're a much more decisive fellow, even more than Miss Xu. You should have been like this right from the beginning, then we wouldn't have had to waste so much time. Alright now, I won't make things too difficult to you. Come and kneel before my Feng, and kowtow three times. Then I'll consider this matter closed."

Wei Luo even got someone to bring two chairs over and placed them in front of Ye Fan.

He sat down on one chair while Xu Mei-Feng took the other.

They looked like an emperor and empress in the past, sitting on their thrones and waited for their citizens to bow to them.

“All seated and ready?” Ye Fan even checked with them first.

“Haha! Yes, all ready. You may kneel now,” laughed Wei Luo merrily.

Xu Mei-Feng also had a smug and arrogant expression on her face as she sat on her own chair. She even took her phone out, ready to capture this moment of glory. The almighty Mr Chu who once lorded it over Yanjing was now going to kneel and apologize to her. That was definitely a moment worthy of recording!

The other members of the Xu family also looked on with gleeful faces as they awaited Ye Fan’s downfall.

Xu Wen-Qing, in particular, was feeling especially pleased to see this.

He felt as though the indignation he had kept in his heart all this time had finally found an outlet.

“Stupid punk, so what if you were pretty capable? The Xu family couldn’t do anything about you, but someone else is able to! No matter how powerful you are, you still have to give in obediently to the Wei family, don’t you?” Xu Wen-Qing sneered in his heart.

“Mr Chu, why are you still standing there? Hurry up and apologize. Feng and I are still waiting,” Wei Luo hurried Ye Fan.

Ye Fan chuckled and said, “Sure.”

After that, he walked towards where Xu Mei-Feng was

seated.

But just when everyone thought that Ye Fan was serious about kneeling down to apologize...

BAM!

All they heard was a loud blast.

Xu Mei-Feng flew into the air, chair and all.

Ye Fan sent her flying through the window and out of the door like a cannonball with a kick.

“Feng?!”

Everything happened too quickly and everyone was instantly thrown into confusion.

After the world fell silent for two seconds, Wei Luo finally realized what just happened. His expression darkened as he slammed the table, got up and yelled furiously at Ye Fan, “You little bastard, how dare you strike her?! You’re asking to get killed!”

But before Wei Luo could say anymore, Ye Fan gave another kick.

There was a yelp before Wei Luo was forced back onto his chair by that kick. The force from that same kick also caused him to fly out like a cannonball along with his chair and he eventually crashed into the high wall behind him. The chair broke into several pieces, while Wei Luo threw up blood as he sprawled on the floor.

Ye Fan’s sudden act of violence shocked everyone.

The Xu family members instantly sat up in their chairs.

Even Xu Lei looked on in fright.

Everyone's eyes and mouths were wide open as they looked at the young man like he was a ghost.

Was this what he meant by settling things in a proper manner?

Everyone in the hall was filled with fear and trembling.

Only Ye Fan was still smiling.

He walked over to stare down at Wei Luo at his feet.

As for Xu Mei-Feng, Ye Fan didn't even spare her a glance. He felt that seeing such a woman would only give him eyesores.

"So, Young Master Wei, do you still want Lei and I to apologize?" Ye Fan smiled calmly.

Wei Luo clenched his fists and gritted his teeth as he climbed to his feet. His bloodied lips carried a sinister and mirthless smile.

"Excellent, punk. I didn't want to fight you, but now, you're asking for it," snarled Wei Luo aggressively.

He suddenly turned and looked out of the window as he shouted fiercely, "Tiger One, Two, Three and Four, listen up! Kill this little hooligan here!"

HUU!

His malicious and furious words caused a wintry wind to billow through the hall.

One second passed.

Two seconds.

Ten whole seconds later, the Tigers that Wei Luo had called upon didn't appear.

"Tiger One? Tiger Two? Are you all deaf? Hurry up and come out to protect me! It's not like I don't pay you enough, you know?!" bellowed Wei Luo furiously.

But there was still no response.

Just when Wei Luo was ready to curse again, a laughter was heard from outside. "Young Master Wei, that's quite enough. Here are your men," came Ye Yu-Yan's merry laughter from outside the hall.

Nobody had noticed when this young lady had left, and when she had reappeared.

In any case, there were four bodies lying in front of her.

Ye Yu-Yan kicked each of them like a soccer ball, sending the unconscious burly men flying and landing neatly in front of Wei Luo.

The steady thud of their landing made the hall shake a few times.

"How...how can this be? How is this possible? These men are high level martial artists I spent a lot of money to hire. How...how could a tiny woman like you knock them out like this?!" Wei Luo was completely bewildered and stared at the men at his feet with fear and terror in his eyes.

He had purposely brought these men along precisely to fight Ye Fan.

But before Ye Fan had even done anything, the young

lady that Ye Fan brought along had already sent these four men halfway to their graves.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Before coming, Xu Mei-Feng had already told Wei Luo that Ye Fan was very strong and was very good at fighting.

Ye Fan had been able to frighten all the rich and powerful in Yanjing into doing his bidding because of this fact.

Wei Luo hadn't taken too much notice of what she said at that time.

After all, in his opinion, no matter how powerful Ye Fan was, he couldn't possibly be stronger than martial artists.

The Wei family wasn't a family of martial artists, but they groomed a number of high level martial artists, and he could just bring more of them along with him.

So even if Ye Fan turned out to be a martial artist as well, he would lose because he would be outnumbered.

It turned out to be wishful thinking on his part.

Wei Luo never dreamt that the high level martial artists he had brought couldn't even hold up against one young woman.

"Young Master Wei, what do you think? Do you still want Lei and I to apologize?" Ye Fan smiled and repeated his question after Ye Yu-Yan had kicked the men at Wei Luo.

But even though Ye Fan was smiling, his voice was filled with disdain and mocking.

Someone like Wei Luo was just a minor character to Ye Fan.

If he hadn't been stupid enough to provoke Xu Lei, Ye Fan would have completely ignored him.

He was merely an ant, so no matter how high he jumped, Ye Fan wouldn't take any notice.

But after a brief period of shock, Wei Luo regained his composure. He looked back at Ye Fan and smiled as well.

"You're the legendary Mr Chu, alright. Since you were able to lord it over Yanjing at such an age, you are certainly no ordinary man. Looks like I really did underestimate you. But don't be too happy yet, I still have many tricks up my sleeve. Did you think I would count on just these few pieces of trash to wedge a foot into Yanjing?"

"I've always been a careful man, and I always make a lot of backup plans. These few pieces of trash are just an appetizer. You've been able to swallow this appetizer, and that actually makes me pretty excited. I've finally met an opponent that's worthy of my attention. One would only feel a sense of achievement after defeating an outstanding opponent after all."

Wei Luo sneered as he wiped away the blood on his lips. The way he looked at Ye Fan was now filled with malice and slyness.

"Don't worry, I'll remember that kick you gave me. It won't be long before I return that to you, a hundred times over!" His words were icy and hateful as they resounded within the hall.

Nobody spoke, and nobody dared to either.

They could all feel the iciness of Wei Luo's voice.

"Looks like the country bumpkin has really infuriated Young Master Wei. It's not a bad thing. The best case scenario would be for the Wei family to completely

eradicate this fellow so that he won't cause anymore trouble!" thought Xu Wen-Qing to himself as he looked on with shifty eyes.

Initially he was afraid that Ye Fan might blow matters up and implicate the Xu family.

The Xu family was really nothing compared to the Wei family after all. If anything happened to Wei Luo here, his family would definitely come after the Xu family for it.

But now, Xu Wen-Qing hoped that Ye Fan would blow this matter up as much as possible.

That way, he could use the Wei family to get rid of Ye Fan instead.

"Ye Fan, Xu Lei, don't be too smug yet! If Luo hadn't sent his other men out, the two of you wouldn't be standing here in one piece! My Luo has a very powerful family that's beyond your imagination! Just you wait! Once his men come back, none of you will be able to get away. I'm going to make sure all of you die here today!"

While Wei Luo and Ye Fan were speaking, Xu Mei-Feng stumbled back into the living room with the help of other family members after being literally kicked out of the house by Ye Fan earlier.

But while Xu Mei-Feng was pale in the face, her expression was threatening.

She looked like she was going to tear Ye Fan and Xu Lei apart.

Nobody could possibly understand what Xu Mei-Feng was feeling now.

This wasn't the first time she had been humiliated by Ye

Fan. This same young man had made her disgrace herself during her own birthday party back then.

She thought that once she had become connected to the powerful Wei family, Ye Fan would be more wary and watch his steps.

But she had been wrong.

Ye Fan was a lunatic.

He was 100% insane.

He never considered the consequences of any of his actions.

How dare he hit the young master of the Wei family?

Was this fellow really unafraid of anything?

The Wei family was one of the most powerful families in the entire country.

The only family in Yanjing that could fight the Wei now was probably the leader of the four great families, the very mysterious and low profile Mo family.

But of course, to Xu Mei-Feng, the Mo family was no match for the Wei family.

She firmly believed that the Wei family was the most powerful family in the country!

“Is that so? Looks like you two are not giving up yet. Well, if you want to play, I’ll play with you guys. I’m interested in finding out exactly how powerful the supposedly most powerful family of Zhonghai is too. I hope you won’t disappoint me.”

For some reason, Ye Fan actually decided to have fun with Wei Luo. Perhaps he was bored, or he suddenly had an interest in the family.

He got Ye Yu-Yan to bring a chair over and sat down very comfortably in the living room.

His complacent look made everyone in the Xu family so angry that smoke was coming out from their nostrils.

“You stupid little punk, still trying to show off here? Wait till Young Master Wei’s men are here! I’m going to watch how you die!” Xu Wen-Qing gritted his teeth hatefully as he glared at Ye Fan. He had never seen anyone so arrogant and so audacious.

But Ye Fan and Ye Yu-Yan weren’t bothered by all these angry and hateful remarks.

Ye Yu-Yan even asked Ye Fan curiously, “Fan, why bother wasting time on these people? You just need to give the command and I’ll make sure all of them regret what they’ve done today!”

But Ye Fan shook his head. “Using brute force on them would make them give in to you physically, but they will not admit defeat in their hearts. Just wait and see. I’ll make all these people who have provoked Lei and myself feel terror from the depths of their hearts.”

He smiled faintly as his words resounded with pride and confidence.

However, Xu Lei was getting more and more worried.

She tugged at Ye Fan’s jacket and tried to persuade him softly, “Fan, I think it’s better not to fight the Wei family head on like this if you don’t have to. The Wei family is a powerful family with a long history in Zhonghai. I’ve

heard from my father before that the Wei family lorded over Zhonghai before the Xu family even rose to power. Even the Xur and Lu families from before treated the Wei family with respect. Sometimes, taking a step back is better for all of us. We already have so many enemies in Yanjing, so let's not make another powerful one in Zhonghai."

She was really afraid that this small family matter would turn into an unsalvageable situation.

"Lei, there are some situations where it's alright to take a step back, but there are some situations where we must not do that. If we take a step back today, I'm very sure that Yanjing is going to be in huge trouble. How could I let you remain here by yourself if that happens?"

"But..." Xu Lei wanted to go on, but Ye Fan cut her off.

"Enough, Lei. I wasn't in Yanjing prior to this, and you had to suffer so much by yourself. Now that I'm here, you just need to sit back and watch. Your Fan will help you to take on the storms of Yanjing! So just relax, alright? I've never been defeated despite going through countless storms over the years. The Xur and Lu families weren't able to do anything about me back then. Why should I fear the Wei family?" said Ye Fan gently. His low and warm voice seemed to possess authority.

Ye Fan had not chosen to fight Wei Luo on impulse, and he wasn't doing it for fun either.

He had his own reasons for doing so.

Chapter 1514 Why Should I Fear?



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Sometimes, you only needed to defeat one party in order to stop the rest from trying.

Ye Fan was going to embark on a long journey, so before leaving, he wanted to cement Xu Lei's position in Yanjing.

If he could trample over the Wei family this time, Yanjing would be peaceful for at least the next decade.

Before coming, Ye Fan had already started thinking about how he could help Xu Lei to keep a tight rein over Yanjing.

Yanjing was a very different place from Jiangdong.

Jiangdong was where Ye Fan was based, and he had been quietly operating within Jiangdong for ten years.

He had won the battle at Mount Tai, held the Feast of the Sea and the Sky, won the fight with Mochizuki Kawa at Dongchang Lake, trampled victoriously on the powerful Lu and Xur families, and struck fear and terror far and wide within the region.

The prestige of Ye Fan had seeped into the very pores of all the rich and powerful of Jiangdong over all these years.

Sometimes he didn't even need to show himself. The name 'Mr Chu' was enough to shake up Jiangdong.

So while it seemed like a mighty task for Qiu Mu-Cheng to govern Jiangdong, the number of obstacles she faced were actually very few and far between.

But what about Yanjing?

This region was way too unfamiliar to Ye Fan.

He had come here no more than five times, and his roots were too shallow here.

Even though he had the support and resources of the Xue and Xu families, and Xu Lei had been helping to manage this side of things, all of them knew that Yanjing only looked peaceful on the surface. There were many unseen undercurrents happening at the same time.

Even if Wei Luo did not appear today, another ambitious person would eventually come to challenge Xu Lei's position and authority.

So Ye Fan needed to defeat someone soundly in order to concretize his legacy in Yanjing.

This opponent had to be someone that was powerful enough to prove Ye Fan's might.

The Wei family of Zhonghai was definitely a suitable candidate.

But of course, Xu Lei had no idea that Ye Fan had all these considerations in mind.

Time continued to pass slowly. Ye Fan remained silent and just sat in his chair confidently.

Meanwhile, Wei Luo made several impatient phone calls to his men.

Very soon, he finished a phone call and smiled threateningly at Ye Fan. "Punk, let me share a piece of good news with you. The head of the Xue family, Xue Ren-Yang, has agreed to work with the Wei family. Everything you relied on to rule Yanjing is now gone. Once my men return from the Xue family, prepare to die!"

Wei Luo had clearly planned for today quite a while ago.

His first move was to team up with the Xu family to topple Xu Lei from her position, then send out his most trusted men to threaten and tempt those who were loyal to Ye Fan like Xue Ren-Yang.

Without these subordinates, Ye Fan would be all alone and would no longer have any standing in Yanjing.

“Is that so? In that case, let’s wait and see,” chuckled Ye Fan. He didn’t seem bothered that the Xue family had betrayed him.

Ye Fan’s reaction infuriated Wei Luo.

“Punk, you’re still acting cool when you’re about to die? I’ll see if you can still put a smile on when you’re on the brink of death later!” Wei Luo was so angry that he gnashed his teeth and wished he could slay Ye Fan right there and then.

But the large majority of the martial artists he had brought along had been part of the team that went to visit the Xue family.

The Xu family had only one Xu Lei to deal with, and he didn’t have to be afraid of one weak woman. On the contrary, he was a lot more wary of the Xue family, and so he sent his best there.

If the Xue family did not agree at the discussion table, then his plan was to use force to beat the Xue family into compliance.

But now, it seemed like everything was moving according to Wei Luo’s plans.

The only thing that went wrong was Ye Fan’s sudden appearance.

But thankfully, the situation was still within his control.

Once his men returned, he was sure that Ye Fan would not be a problem.

Even if his men failed, he still had one more backup plan.

He had planned this trip to Yanjing for a long time now.

Whether the Wei family of Zhonghai could become the most powerful family of China or not depended on whether his plans to conquer Yanjing succeeded or not.

If he successfully took over Yanjing, he would become the top contributor of the family.

Nobody in the family would be able to fight with him for the position of head of the family after that.

VROOM...

While Wei Luo was still in deep thought, the sound of cars driving in could be heard.

Wei Luo and the rest of the Xu family suddenly felt a surge of energy course through their bodies as they all sat up excitedly.

“Haha! My men are back! Punk, just wait to die!” Wei Luo sniggered before running to the door with Xu Mei-Feng to welcome his subordinates.

Several figures appeared within everyone’s line of sight.

They were all in neat suits and looked fierce and ruthless.

Strong winds seemed to accompany their confident strides.

Anyone with sufficient sensitivity would discover that these people had a huge amount of internal energy flowing through their bodies.

“These men are all martial artists.” Ye Yu-Yan immediately frowned when she saw the men outside.

She couldn't help but feel a little worried now.

Could the Wei family be a martial arts family that had merely hidden themselves well?

The number of martial artists in proportion to the total population of the country was very low.

Ordinary rich families like the Xu family didn't even have a single martial artist among their family members.

But the Wei family had been able to mobilize so many high level martial artists. Ye Yu-Yan couldn't help but be affected by this.

The Lv family had been able to cause so much trouble the last time and made Jiangdong tread on thin ice.

Thankfully, War God Castle did not punish Ye Fan for his deeds, otherwise Ye Yu-Yan didn't even dare to imagine what the consequences would have been.

To Ye Yu-Yan, no matter how powerful Ye Fan was, he couldn't possibly fight an entire nation.

If this Wei family turned out to be one of China's hidden martial arts families and ended up in a fight with Ye Fan, War God Castle would probably be angered and feel that Ye Fan was acting with impunity just because he had gotten away with it once.

“Uncle Liu, Uncle Li, I'm so glad you're all finally here. I've

waited so long for all of you! Hurry now and kill that hooligan for me!" hurried Wei Luo anxiously as he smiled at the men walking towards him.

But to his surprise, the men didn't seem to have heard him at all. They walked straight past him and continued walking into the hall.

"Wait, Uncle Liu, where are all of you going? I'm right here! Also, where's Uncle Wang? Why don't I see him?" Wei Luo just thought that they hadn't noticed him and ran after them.

But no matter what he said, everyone ignored him.

Just when Wei Luo was feeling really puzzled, a cold laughter rang from outside the estate. "I suppose you must be Young Master Wei. I'm the head of the Xue family, Xue Ren-Yang. I accidentally killed one of your subordinates, and because I was feeling very guilty, I thought I should come to apologize personally. Tong Shan, fling that body over so that Young Master Wei can take it back."

Xue Ren-Yang waved his arm.

A muscular man beside Xue Ren-Yang swung his arm and flung a corpse towards Wei Luo.

When Wei Luo saw who the dead body was, his entire body trembled violently and his eyes were as wide as saucers.

"Uncle Wang?! This...I...You bastards! How dare you kill Uncle Wang?! Xue Ren-Yang, how DARE you! The Wei family was trying to be polite by offering you a partnership, but instead, you killed one of mine? I'm not going to let you off for this!"

Wei Luo was instantly incensed upon seeing Uncle Wang's corpse.

This Uncle Wang had been his bodyguard since he was a child and they shared a bond that had lasted for decades. He was one of Wei Luo's most trusted men.

He never thought that his Uncle Wang would perish at the hands of the Xue family.

"All of you deserve to die! The Xue family deserves to die! Uncle Liu, Uncle Li, slaughter this old fellow right now! I don't care about any partnership or agreement now! The person who killed Uncle Wang deserves to die! All of you do!" roared Wei Lu ferociously.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

But to Wei Luo's surprise, no matter how much he yelled and shouted, all his subordinates refused to budge. It was as if they hadn't heard him at all.

"Uncle Liu? Uncle Li? What's going on? Didn't you hear what I said? I told you to slaughter that old fellow!" roared Wei Luo furiously.

"Haha! Young Master Wei, don't bother wasting your saliva anymore. These men all work for the Xue family now, so why would they listen to you?" Xue Ren-Yang's calm laughter came from behind.

Wei Luo was even angrier now.

"Nonsense! The Wei family has groomed them for nearly ten years, so they are loyal to the Wei family! Why would they listen to you instead?" Wei Luo shouted back fiercely. He didn't believe anything that Xue Ren-Yang had just said.

Xue Ren-Yang couldn't be bothered to explain himself to him. He looked ahead and gave orders in a low voice, "Liu Hai, Li Hu, since you now belong to the Xue family, it means that you are subordinates to the Dragon Master. Come in with me now to greet the Dragon Master!" His voice reverberated through the hall.

After that, he walked towards Ye Fan and bowed towards him. "I, the Sun Dragon, greets the Dragon Master!"

These words were like a gigantic rock falling into the sea, raising a tsunami in its wake.

Immediately after Xue Ren-Yang had greeted Ye Fan, Tong Shan, Qing Tan as well as all the martial artists who

used to belong to the Wei family all bowed in unison towards Ye Fan and greeted him, "We greet the Dragon Master!"

"We welcome the Dragon Master to Yanjing!"

Their rising voices were like a giant wave that drowned everyone else in the hall.

Wei Luo was stunned and his eyes widened as he watched this scene unfold.

All the other Xu family members were also gaping. They looked like they had seen a ghost.

Xu Mei-Feng looked even more bewildered.

"Are all of you blind? Luo is right here! Why are you bowing to that bum from the countryside?! Your master is right here!" Xu Mei-Feng screamed loudly.

Wei Luo was equally flabbergasted. "Uncle Liu, Uncle Li, what...what do you mean by this? You mean you've really betrayed me and the Wei family? Are all of you really such ingrates? Don't forget who has been paying you millions a year and providing you with food and lodging all these years! Aren't you the least bit guilty about what you're doing now? Don't any of you have any shame at all?!"

He was about to go mad from how angry he was.

Never in his wildest dreams would he have imagined that the people he placed so much hope in would actually betray him.

He had originally sent these men to get the Xue family on his side, but instead of cutting off one of Ye Fan's biggest supporters, he lost his own men to the Xue family.

"Young Master Wei, we're really sorry. But even birds know how to choose a good tree to build a nest in, so humans would also naturally choose to serve a better master. From now on, we will no longer work for the Wei family. Don't worry, we will return this year's retainer fee to the Wei family," the leader of the martial artists said to Wei Luo with no expression on his face.

These men were hired by the Wei family and were not related to the family in any way.

Since their relationship was built purely on the basis of money, it was easy to dismantle.

Xue Ren-Yang had both threatened and offered them rewards when they had gone to his place earlier.

First, he got Tong Shan and Qing Tan to slaughter the most powerful among all of them with just one move, and that man was Uncle Wang. That alone was enough to scare the rest of them into compliance.

After that, Xue Ren-Yang offered them high amounts of money to hire them instead.

Since these martial artists were essentially just mercenaries working for the Wei family, this ruse totally worked.

They had seen what Tong Shan and Qing Tan were capable of, so they didn't really have a choice either.

Chapter 1516 Turning the Tables

They knew that the Wei family might seek revenge on them once they found out about their betrayal, but they couldn't think too far ahead. It was more important that they survive the current crisis first.

Wei Luo was even angrier now. He was on the verge of exploding now.

"Liu Hai, Li Hu, both of you are ingrates! Bastards! I gave you important positions and the family has treated you so well! And this is how you repay me? This is how you repay the Wei family? Just you wait! The Wei family will not let you off! Traitors like all of you deserve to die! All of you must die!" roared Wei Luo venomously as his eyes reddened.

Xue Ren-Yang just laughed. "Young Master Wei, let's talk about the future another time. I think you'd better think about your own safety first."

After laughing coldly, Xue Ren-Yang turned to Ye Fan, "Dragon Master, this Wei Luo has ill intentions of taking over everything I own in Yanjing, as well as the Xu family's assets and power. On top of that, he has been irreverent towards you and disrespectful towards Miss Xu Lei. Please give the order, Dragon Master, so that we can kill this fellow right now!"

What?

Xue Ren-Yang's words sent shockwaves through the whole hall.

Xu Wen-Qing's eyes opened wide.

He thought that Ye Fan had already been aggressive

enough when he had kicked Wei Luo earlier.

He didn't expect Xue Ren-Yang to be even more ruthless and actually want to kill Wei Luo.

"Are all these people insane? Wei Luo is the eldest grandson of the Wei family and is very likely to become the head of the family in the future. If he dies in Yanjing, the entire family is going to march into Yanjing to avenge him. Don't any of these people consider consequences at all?" Xu Wen-Qing felt his heart tremble in shock.

Wei Luo shuddered as well. He took several steps backwards without even realizing it in his fright.

Ye Fan's calmness was in stark contrast to the reactions of everyone around him.

He just laughed quietly. "No hurry, he's just an ant. It won't take much for me to kill him. But Sun Dragon, you've done a good job. Thanks to your support, Lei has been able to hold her ground in Yanjing all these years. Otherwise, I think it would really be too hard for this silly girl to hang in there."

"Dragon Master, what are you saying? Everything that I have today was given to me by you. Helping the Dragon Mistress to share her burden is part of my job," replied Xue Ren-Yang with a smile.

But after he said that, that silly girl standing behind Ye Fan felt her entire face redden.

Ye Fan coughed loudly several times as well.

"Tsk! Don't spout nonsense like that, you old geezer!

Even though I don't care about any of this, Lei is a girl after all. If you ruin her reputation, how is she going to find someone to marry in the future? If you spout nonsense like that again, I'll slap you!" Ye Fan reprimanded Xue Ren-Yang.

Xue Ren-Yang just laughed sheepishly. God knows what this old man was thinking about.

"Tong Shan, Qing Tan, it's been hard on both of you as well. You've been shuttling between Jiangdong and Yanjing." Ye Fan turned to look at Qing Tan and Tong Shan.

These two were long time subordinates of Ye Fan.

Tong Shan in particular, had been by Ye Fan's side for many years now.

Back when Mochizuki Kawa made an attack on Jiangdong, Xu Lei would have died at Dongchang Lake if Tong Shan and the rest hadn't risked their lives to save her.

Ye Fan had sent them to Yanjing to recuperate after being severely injured in that fight.

After they had recovered, they remained in Yanjing to protect Xu Lei as well as to help Xue Ren-Yang to deal with any trouble.

Ye Fan looked at Tong Shan's old injury.

Mochizuki Kawa had nearly managed to kill Tong Shan back when they fought at Dongchang Lake. Even though Ye Fan had managed to save Tong Shan's life, the

Chapter 1516 Turning the Tables

damage caused by that injury was irreparable.

Unless a miracle occurred, Tong Shan would probably never be able to advance in his martial arts skills anymore.

This was a guilt that Ye Fan always carried.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

“Young Master, my injuries healed a long time ago. I can kill a bull with one punch again now! Guarding Yanjing for you isn’t a problem anymore, so you really don’t have to worry about me anymore.” Tong Shan grinned as he laughed foolishly.

This man was more than two meters tall, but he was as honest as a child in front of Ye Fan.

Ye Fan shook his head and laughed at the tall but silly boy in front of him. “You silly fellow, what do you mean by it isn’t a problem anymore? What you’ve lost is your future in martial arts! I went to Japan back then to avenge you, but with Tsukuyomi’s rebirth, I wasn’t able to kill that Mochizuki Kawa for you.”

He was reminded of many old memories when he saw these old friends of his, and he eventually let out a long sigh.

“Forget it, it’s all in the past, so I won’t mention it anymore. If I manage to come back alive, I’ll make sure I find a way to cure your ailment even if I have to travel the world for a doctor,” said Ye Fan in a low voice. He sounded strangely solemn and determined.

This was his promise and also his responsibility.

Back then, Tong Shan had followed him in order to fulfil a bigger dream.

But now, Tong Shan’s future had been curtailed in a bid to protect his loved ones.

It was hard for Ye Fan to not feel guilty.

But Ye Fan didn't dare to promise too much either.

He didn't know if would survive the next part of his journey.

"Young Master, what do you mean by that? Have you run into trouble? Why do you speak like that?"

Both Tong Shan and Qing Tan were shocked by Ye Fan's words.

Xu Lei turned with a start to look at Ye Fan too. The worry in her eyes increased.

"Haha, it's nothing really. What trouble could I be in? Others might not know what I'm capable of, but you know very well what I can do. Alright now, we can catch up later. I've got to settle this eyesore here first." Ye Fan seemed unwilling to dwell on this topic, so he quickly changed the topic and shifted the focus back to Wei Luo.

"What do you think, Young Master Wei? Do you still think that I don't deserve to be the king of Yanjing? Do you still dare to make myself and Lei apologize to you?" Ye Fan smiled calmly. The mocking in his voice was so apparent.

Ye Yu-Yan, Xue Ren-Yang and the rest looked at Wei Luo with pitiful glances.

In their opinion, this previously high and mighty Young Master Wei was cornered, so he was now like a piece of meat on the chopping board, and could only wait to be hacked to pieces by Ye Fan.

But the fear and panic that they imagined would engulf

Wei Luo did not happen.

Instead, Wei Luo clenched his fists and a sinister look appeared on his handsome face. "Excellent, Ye Fan. You've really made me look at you in a different light. But all of this shall come to an end now. I will show you what the Wei family of Zhonghai is truly made of!"

He shook his head and continued, "I didn't intend to call upon him, but Ye Fan, you asked for it! I'm going to make you understand what real power looks like, and how despair feels like!"

With that, Wei Luo's expression turned icy as he spun around and shouted loudly towards the outside of the estate, "Elder Kong, I'll leave the rest to you!"

He cupped his fists and bowed slightly towards the entrance. His voice was bright and respectful, and he looked very humble now.

What?

"This Wei Luo still has another backup plan?" Xu Lei frowned immediately.

Ye Yu-Yan and the rest had grim expressions on their faces too.

The Xu family was surprised too.

Nobody expected Wei Luo to have hidden so many trump cards.

"Looks like Young Master Wei had prepared himself well for this trip to Yanjing," murmured the Xu family quietly

Chapter 1517 Mysterious Elder

among themselves. They turned to glance in the same direction as Wei Luo.

One second passed.

Two seconds.

Ten seconds later, the space in front of the house remained empty. Nobody appeared.

“What’s going on? There’s nobody out there. Did something happen?” Xu Wen-Qing and his family were dismayed at this.

After all, Wei Luo’s methods against Ye Fan had all failed so far, and they were really afraid that Wei Luo’s last trump card would turn out to be a farce.

“Young Master Wei, do you really have someone coming?” Xu Wen-Qing asked Wei Luo quietly out of worry. He looked very worried.

They had driven Xu Lei out from the family, so they had fallen out with Ye Fan.

The Xu family was now in the same boat as Wei Luo. If Wei Luo won, they would win. But if Wei Luo lost, they would suffer too.

If Wei Luo did not manage to defeat Ye Fan today, they were going to going to perish for sure.

It was only natural for the Xu family to worry if Wei Luo really had anymore trump cards or not.

Just after Xu Wen-Qing raised his doubts, a wind started

gusting outside the house.

The billowing wintry wind sounded like the roar of demons as it blew loudly.

Fallen leaves were blown about and dust was sent flying.

“What on earth...”

“What’s happening?”

The sudden change caused everyone in the hall to feel shock and fear.

“Look out there! What’s that? Is that a human?” someone in the hall exclaimed suddenly.

Everyone turned to look in the same direction.

Without anyone realizing, a shadow had slowly begun to appear amidst the flying sand and dust.

That was the shadow of an elderly man. His white hair flew wildly in the wind.

His gray robes flapped loudly.

When he appeared, everyone felt a tremendous amount of pressure weigh on them.

Even Tong Shan and the rest with Ye Fan could feel the pressure.

“What a powerful presence! I’m surprised that the Wei family has a martial artist at this level working for them,” murmured Ye Yu-Yan to herself with a grim look in her

eye.

Tong Shan and Qing Tan couldn't help but become nervous.

But while one side worried, the other side celebrated.

All the worries weighing on the Xu family's mind disappeared with the appearance of this clearly powerful martial artist. They were now filled with glee.

"Young Master Wei is indeed incredible. This man must be an extremely powerful martial artist, since his presence alone is so formidable. The Wei family is indeed a family that has been powerful in Zhonghai for more than a century now. The Xu family will never reach such heights! With such a high level martial artist on our side, that hooligan is doomed for sure! Not even the gods will be able to save him!" The Xu family was so excited.

Their faces and ears were red from the excitement.

It felt like the hero who would be able to turn the tides had come exactly in their moment of greatest despair.

"Luo, tell me, which fellow actually dared to hurt you? Who is this fellow who's tired of living?" an unfeeling voice could be heard from meters away.

The man was still some distance away, but his voice was imposing and firm as it boomed loudly in everyone's ears like thunder.

His voice alone was already so powerful. Everyone was even more reverent towards this man now.

Chapter 1517 Mysterious Elder

“Elder Kong, I’m really so sorry. I didn’t intend to trouble you at all, but I really had no choice. All the strong fighters I brought along have perished. Since there’s nothing else I could do, I have no other choice but to humbly request that you help me out,” said Wei Luo with a very guilty and apologetic voice.

Elder Kong held a very highly respected position in the Wei family after all.

Even his grandfather, the head of the Wei family, was exceptionally polite to Elder Kong.

Logically speaking, Wei Luo should not have had access to a martial artist of this level.

But this trip to Yanjing was an important one, and Wei Luo was on a mission that had a great impact on the family.

So the Wei family made an exception and got Elder Kong to follow Wei Luo on this trip, so as to protect him from harm.

Since Wei Luo needed his help now, he had to say it as nicely as possible and put Elder Kong on a pedestal .



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

“Luo, there’s no need for all this unnecessary talk. Just tell me, who dared to provoke you? I will help you to settle everything else,” replied the older man in a low voice.

His imposing words carried authority and confidence.

“Haha! Excellent! I feel assured after hearing what you’ve said, Elder Kong,” laughed Wei Luo merrily. His handsome face was brimming with smugness and arrogance.

He was sure that Ye Fan wouldn’t stand a chance now that Elder Kong was willing to fight for him.

Elder Kong was the chairman of the Zhonghai Martial Arts Association after all.

Even though Wei Luo was not trained in martial arts and didn’t know much about this world, Elder Kong’s title and position alone told him that Elder Kong was definitely of high standing in the martial arts world.

How could such a respectable martial artist be unable to defeat a little gangster from the countryside?

But just when Wei Luo was about to point out who was the one who had offended him, Ye Fan’s calm voice quietly rang out, “No need to ask him. I’m the one who provoked him.”

Ye Fan’s voice wasn’t loud, but it weighed heavily on everyone’s ears.

“My god! This fellow is really too audacious for his own good!”

“I can’t believe he actually owned up!”

“What disregard for the elder!”

“He’s simply too complacent!”

The entire hall was in an uproar.

The members of the Xu family were shocked at Ye Fan’s audacity and exclaimed loudly among themselves.

“Punk, you can stop being arrogant now because your death is near! Elder Kong is the most powerful martial artist in Zhonghai and he’s very highly respected. One slap from him could kill you. I’m going to just sit here and watch you die!” snarled Wei Luo nastily at Ye Fan. He was irritated by Ye Fan’s audacity too.

By this time, the elder had already walked into the living room.

But he couldn’t see Ye Fan’s face because everyone was blocking him.

However, when he heard what Ye Fan said, his expression also darkened.

“Excellent. You’re the second person who dares to speak to me like this. The first one is already dead. It looks like you hope to die too!”

The old man’s eyes darkened and he unleashed a cold aura from his body with an explosion.

The tables and chairs in front of him turned to dust from the impact of this aura.

The gray robed old man walked further into the hall with this freezing aura.

Everyone parted like the waters to let him through, until he had reached the young man.

Ye Fan remained seated where he was quietly. His back was facing the old man and he had never even turned once to look at him.

All he did was to sit there and enjoy his tea.

His actions had clearly angered the old man.

Sometimes, being ignored was even more offensive than being provoked.

“Young man, get up and prepare to die!” shouted the old man. He was at his height of his fury now.

He stomped hard on the floor and a tremendous surge of energy came up from his legs and gathered in his palms.

After that, the old man swung his arms and his huge palms began to stir up a strong wind that he thrust towards the back of Ye Fan’s head.

This was a really powerful move.

Everyone was sure that once this palm hit Ye Fan, his head was sink right in.

“Dragon Master, watch out!” Tong Shan didn’t expect the old man to attack almost immediately. In his shock, he and Qing Tan dashed out to block the attack from hitting Ye Fan.

Chapter 1518 Failed to Recognize

“Move aside!” roared the old man angrily as he turned his palms to hit them both.

There were two muffled blasts and everyone watched as two figures crashed through the windows and flew out like cannonballs.

“That’s...that’s really formidable...”

The martial artists whom Xue Ren-Yang had bought over were instantly stupefied by this.

They had witnessed what Tong Shan and Qing Tan were capable of when they were at the Xue family estate.

They had only needed one punch to kill the most powerful martial artist among them.

But such powerful martial artists hadn’t even managed to hold up against one attack from this old man.

It wasn’t hard to imagine how shocked these martial artists were at Elder Kong’s might.

“That was amazing!”

“Elder Kong is really powerful!”

After a short period of silence, the Xu family started getting even more excited now.

They were all cheering and clapping as they continued to marvel at how strong Elder Kong was.

“Two worthless things. How dare you block my way? You’re all nothing to me!”

After he had slapped away Tong Shan and Qing Tan, the gray robed elder sneered coldly and gathered his energies again to attack the young man sitting in front of him. "Little punk, let's see who else can save you now!"

A wild wind started blowing as waves of energy came from all directions.

The old man gave a low shout and thrust his palm towards Ye Fan's head again.

This time, he had gathered even more energy and his stance was even more imposing.

"Ye Fan, that's the end of this farce! You asked for it!" laughed Wei Luo mirthlessly.

Xu Mei-Feng looked excited to see Ye Fan's defeat as well.

The rest of the Xu family waited to see Ye Fan end in tragedy.

Only Ye Yu-Yan and the rest with her were filled with worry and anxiety.

Xu Lei couldn't help but shout, "Fan, dodge!"

She was already terrified when she saw how Tong Shan and Qing Tan had been sent flying with one slap. Her face was already void of all color.

But even though the old man had made a second attack, Ye Fan was still sipping tea as if it was none of his business.

What worried Xu Lei even more was that Ye Fan was still sitting with his back facing the old man, and he didn't even bother to turn back once.

Could it be that he couldn't feel the danger coming towards him?

But just as Xu Lei screamed and the old man's palm was about to land, Ye Fan finally slowly turned around.

The young man's handsome features suddenly appeared in everyone's line of sight, including the gray robed man's.

A palm attack was headed towards his face.

The winds caused by the attack roared loudly in his ears.

But Ye Fan continued to sit and watch with a smile.

When this harmless looking face appeared within the old man's line of sight, Elder Kong suddenly felt like he had been struck by lightning and went into a daze immediately.

His entire body trembled and his eyes widened.

"Ye...Ye Fan?"

What the...

Elder Kong nearly broke down when he recognized Ye Fan.

All the anger he had before instantly dissipated.

All he was left with was a heart full of fear and terror.

He never expected that the person that Wei Luo wanted him to bash up would turn out to be Ye Fan.

The old man cursed Wei Luo wildly in his heart and nearly peed his pants.

He forcibly stopped the attack that he had sent towards Ye Fan, missing the young man by just one inch.

Then he remained rooted to the spot like a statue.

He didn't dare to move at all.

Only his eyes were as wide as saucers.

They looked like they were about to fall out soon.

Just when everyone was wondering why Elder Kong had suddenly stopped his attack, Ye Fan's voice rang in the air, "Elder Kong, it's been a long time."

These few words seemed to weigh a ton on Kong Ming.

THUD!

Everyone watched in shock as the old man knelt before Ye Fan.

"Unrivalled Grandmaster, please accept this bow from me, Kong Ming! I was the one who was blind and did not recognize you!"

Chapter 1518 Failed to Recognize



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

The entire place fell deathly silent.

From the moment Kong Ming fell to his knees, the entire house fell silent.

Every single person was too shocked to move.

“What...what on earth is going on?”

Xu Wen-Qing froze like a wooden chicken as his eyes grew wide.

Xu Mei-Feng's face was covered in shock as she stared on in disbelief.

Wei Luo himself felt as though someone had slapped him and he was too bewildered for words.

“Elder...Elder Kong, you...why...” Those were all the words that could come out of Wei Luo.

Xu Lei and Ye Yu-Yan were also confused.

Their hands covered their lips and they looked very puzzled.

It was clear that even though they were close to Ye Fan, even they had no idea what was going on.

The only person who was still able to remain calm was Ye Fan as he sat comfortably on his chair.

“Oh, so Elder Kong still remembers me. I thought you'd have already forgotten me after not seeing each other for more than a year.” Ye Fan looked down at the kneeling Kong Ming as he spoke amicably but with a

nasty look on his face.

“Un...unrivalled Grandmaster, back...back when we were in the Amazon rainforest, your prowess shocked the entire globe. Your junior here has always remembered what you look like. Even if I forget what I look like, I wouldn't dare to forget what you look like, the almighty Unrivalled,” said Kong Ming in a trembling voice. He could sense the iciness in Ye Fan's words and it terrified him.

Everyone else was even more shocked to hear his words.

Who would have thought that an old man would call himself a junior in front of Ye Fan?

It was obvious that this old man revered and respected Ye Fan greatly.

But Ye Fan merely scoffed.

“Don't say that, I'm really not worth of any of it. I'd better get up and prepare to die,” replied Ye Fan with a frosty smile.

Kong Ming really peed his pants this time.

His eyes were filled with fear and he was trembling all over. “Mr...Mr Ye, everything I said earlier...was nonsense! I didn't know it was you! Please don't take it personally! Unrivalled Grandmaster, please, please forgive me! If I had known it was you, I wouldn't have dared to show off in front of you!” pleaded Kong Ming miserably. He was so frightened, he felt his soul was about to leave his body.

Others might not know Ye Fan's prowess, but Kong Ming

did.

Back when they went to the rainforest together to look for spirit energy fruits, Kong Ming was the leader of the team.

He had seen for himself how vicious and powerful Ye Fan was.

It only took one punch and one kick for him to kill an elder of Chu Sect.

It was also said that Ye Fan had fought two supreme grandmasters singlehandedly on the island that was in the middle of the lake.

After he returned to China, Kong Ming then found out that the young man from Jiangdong on the team was actually the hidden seventh pillar of the nation and a supreme grandmaster!

At that time, Kong Ming was terrified after learning about this. But there were also rumors that the Unrivalled had already died, so Kong Ming wasn't too worried about that.

However, some time ago, the massacre at West Lake in Jiangbei had rocked China, and rumors that the Unrivalled was back flooded the nation.

At that moment, Kong Ming knew that the young man was definitely back.

He had been feeling very uneasy ever since he found out that Ye Fan was back in China.

After all, that trip to the rainforest had been very unpleasant.

Now that he knew who Ye Fan really was, he wanted to find a time to visit Ye Fan and apologize to him personally.

One of the reasons why he followed Wei Luo to Yanjing was for this purpose.

He had planned to go straight to Jiangdong once his work in Yanjing was done.

He didn't expect to run into Ye Fan here.

Worse still, he had offended Ye Fan again.

"Why is this happening to me?!" Kong Ming was so terrified and frustrated that he nearly started crying.

He was both afraid and upset.

Ye Fan was a killing machine.

He heard that Ye Fan was the one who had singlehandedly massacred all those people who died at West Lake.

More than a hundred martial artists had perished at West Lake.

One of China's top three martial arts families, the Lv family, had been wiped out by him too.

The newly crowned supreme grandmaster, Lv Song-Liang, had been pinned to a stone pillar by Ye Fan with

Chapter 1519 Kneel Down

His eyes were bloodshot as he continued to yell and shout at the old man.

“Go to hell and shut your mouth!” Kong Ming roared back furiously and slapped Wei Luo to the floor.

If Wei Luo hadn't come from a powerful family like the Wei family, Kong Ming would probably have killed him on the spot.

“You stupid little bastard! How dare you go around offending people you can't afford to? Are you trying to get me killed? Damn it! You've really gotten me into big trouble this time!” roared Kong Ming angrily as he kicked Wei Luo furiously.

Everyone was really flabbergasted by this sudden turn of events.

“What's...what's going on now?”

“Why is the man that Young Master Wei hired hitting Young Master Wei now?”

Some members of the Xu family were whispering fearfully to each other.

But despite the confusion in their hearts, not a single person dared to go up and stop the old man.

Eventually, Kong Ming got tired and stopped kicking Wei Luo.

He went back to kneeling in front of Ye Fan to apologize and plead for mercy.

“Mr Ye, it’s his fault! He’s the one who wanted me to deal with you! The Wei family is my benefactor, and I agreed to help because I wanted to repay the favor. But I really didn’t know that you were the one whom they wanted to deal with! I deserve to die! I’m the one who was too blind to see that it was you!” wailed Kong Ming miserably as fear and regret filled his heart. His tears and snot couldn’t stop flowing.

His pitiful crying face could compete with Li Er’s.

“That’s enough. Since you’re still of value to the Chinese martial arts circle, I will not pursue today’s matter any further. But if you do this again next time, I won’t spare you! Get out now!” shouted Ye Fan in a thunderous voice.

Kong Ming felt as if he had just been given a new lease of life. He kowtowed three more times to Ye Fan, then scrambled to his feet to make a run for it.

Perhaps he was too nervous and didn’t watch where he was going, so he actually tripped over Wei Luo, who was still sprawled on the floor.

“Bloody hell, go away!” Kong Ming angrily kicked Wei Luo one more time, then ran off without even turning back.

The hall fell silent again after Kong Ming had left.

Everyone glanced at each other. Nobody expected things to end this way.

After a brief period of silence, Ye Fan was done drinking the tea in his cup.

He finally got up, scoured the entire room with his frosty

Chapter 1519 Kneel Down

eyes, before his gaze finally landed on Wei Luo, who had just managed to climb to his feet.

“What...what do you want? I’m warning you, I’m the young master of the Wei family. My father is the head of the Wei family and my family is extremely powerful. I have family members in every industry of the country, so how dare you...”

BAM BAM!

Before Wei Luo could finish speaking, Ye Fan kicked him twice.

There was a bloodcurdling scream as Wei Luo’s knee caps were both broken.

“Kneel down!”



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Ye Fan's ferocious shout sounded like a blast of thunder.

These two simple words seemed to weigh a ton.

Wei Luo couldn't hold up against the weight of his authoritative voice and fell to his knees instantly.

"Arghhh!! You bastard! How dare you force me to kneel?!" Wei Luo's intense and frightening roars filled the hall.

He had been born into privilege and was given the best treatment everywhere he went.

Besides kneeling before his own grandfather, he had never knelt before anybody else.

But now, he had been forced to kneel before a hooligan from the countryside. This was a terrible insult to Wei Luo.

Fury, humiliation and sheer pain filled Wei Luo like a fire, burning his entire heart.

His eyes were bloodshot as he roared like a madman.

After Ye Fan had forced Wei Luo to his knees, everyone else in the hall was filled with fear and shock as well.

Even those on Ye Fan's side began to look worried too.

"Fan, don't you think you're overdoing things a little? He's from the Wei family of Zhonghai after all. If we treat him like this, I'm afraid that the Wei family will attack with a vengeance once they find out," said Xu Lei worriedly.

"So what if they attack with a vengeance? They are the

to keep any of your assets in Yanjing, and you'd lose Jiangdong too!" shouted Xu Wen-Qing aggressively, even though he was feeling fearful inside.

When Xu Lei and Ye Fan were talking earlier, the rest of the Xu family was already feeling very unsettled. They could only count on Wei Luo's family to keep Ye Fan in check.

But once Xu Wen-Qing said these words, Ye Fan's sinister gaze landed on him.

Xu Wen-Qing felt cold all over and shuddered violently.

He felt as though the grim reaper was staring at him.

Ye Fan got up and started walking towards Xu Wen-Qing.

With every step he took, the old man's face became one shade whiter.

Xu Wen-Qing's body was trembling as he asked, "What... what do you want? I'm an elder of the Xu family and an elder to Xu Lei, don't tell me that you're..."

PAK!

Ye Fan slapped him before he could finish speaking.

The old man's teeth broke and blood spurted out.

"This slap is for the Xu family! Because you are blind, unable to tell good from bad, and unable to discern right from wrong!"

PAK!

ones who provoked me first. Do you expect me to just sit around and let them walk all over me? Besides, it's just one Wei family. There's nothing to be afraid of. I've wiped out the Lv family and I trampled on the Lu and Xur families. Did you think one tiny Wei family from Zhonghai would be powerful enough to summon the gods or something?" replied Ye Fan in a stern voice that echoed within the house. His low voice sounded really angry.

The Wei family had created trouble in Yanjing and seemed to have targeted Xu Lei, but they were really trying to attack Ye Fan.

First, they sent men to persuade the Xue family to defect, then they forced Xu Lei out of her position as the head of the family. This was all done to remove Ye Fan's arms and legs in Yanjing.

Even though Yanjing wasn't Ye Fan's base, he had a share in this region for a long time via the Xue family.

He wasn't going to give his years of hard work to someone else just like that.

Besides, if he really backed down, Xu Lei would never find her place in Yanjing or even within her own family.

"What audacity! What a young and audacious man you are! It is true that a calf does not realize how dangerous a tiger is to itself. Did you really think that just because you're the leader of Jiangdong and you have a firm grasp over the Xue family, you could do whatever you want with impunity? The Wei family is powerful beyond your imagination! Since you have humiliated Young Master Wei like this today, just wait till they come back for revenge! Once they start their attacks, you won't be able

Chapter 1520 Don't You Feel Guilty at All?

Ye Fan gave a second slap.

Xu Wen-Qing howled in pain. Half of his face was already misaligned from the impact.

“This one is for Lei! Because you’re a muddle-headed old man who has listened to wicked advice and forced Lei out of her position!”

PAK!

Ye Fan gave him one last slap, which sent Xu Wen-Qing flying.

The old man flew a short distance before crashing to the floor, and covered it with broken teeth and blood.

“This slap is for you! Because you remain unrepentant and you’ve committed mistake after mistake without any remorse! On account of Lei, I’ll spare your life. I did not expect my mercy to result in the worsening of your deeds. How do you expect me to let all of you off like this?” His icy voice sounded like the wintry winds.

After three consecutive slaps, the oldest member of the Xu family was sprawled on the floor in a mess of his own blood. He couldn’t stand at all.

The rest of the Xu family was already too frightened to do anything.

They didn’t even dare to let a fart out.

All the elders were terrified, and Xu Mei-Feng was even more terrified.

She had experienced Ye Fan's viciousness herself.

She was sure that if she said anything now, Ye Fan might kill her.

But even though they didn't dare to say anything now, it didn't mean that Ye Fan was going to let them off.

After Ye Fan was done slapping Xu Wen-Qing, he spun around to look at the rest of the Xu family and his angry voice resounded loudly once more.

"All of you too! All of you are a bunch of ignorant fools! Back at the battle at Yanqi Lake, your family had provoked me. If not for Lei, I would have wiped all of you out then! But instead of being grateful and repaying the favor, you ganged up with others to oust Lei from her position."

"She has been so kind, but you have let her down! She has put in so much effort into running the family, but you have betrayed her! All you care about is that Lei is working for me. But don't you know that Lei is also working hard for the sake of the Xu family?"

"If not for Lei, did you think the Xu family would have risen to its current position after two years? All of you are old and muddleheaded! Don't you feel guilty at all for how you've treated Lei?" His fiery words rumbled like thunder.

His string of questions made the Xu family red-faced and at a loss for words.

At the end of his angry tirade, Ye Fan roared angrily, "All of you, kneel down!"

BOOM!

An authoritative aura filled the house and shot through the clouds.

The Xu family felt as though a mountain had come crashing down upon them.

They couldn't take the weight on them at all and collapsed on their knees.

Only Ye Fan remained standing with his hands folded behind his back as he looked at them domineeringly.

Xu Lei's eyes reddened without her realizing it as she stared at the young man. Her heart felt so touched.

There were many people in this world, but only this young man knew how much she had suffered and understood her pain. He was the only one in the world who would stand up for her when she was being bullied.

"Fan, my greatest fortune is to have met you," she whispered in her heart as she looked fondly at the young man with a silly smile on her face.

All of a sudden, Wei Luo started laughing despite being still on his knees.

His laughter sounded a little insane, and was filled with hatred and malice.

Ye Fan frowned and looked at him. "What are you laughing at?"

"Haha! I'm laughing because you're doomed! I've already

called my family for help, and they'll be here anytime! Prepare to die!" Wei Luo endured the terrible pain he felt and cackled loudly as a threatening and arrogant expression spread across his face.

He was the heir to the Wei family after all, so he had plenty of ways to call for help in an emergency.

These methods had certainly come in useful today.

If he wanted to deal with Ye Fan, he had to rely on the strength of his own clan.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

“Is that so?” Ye Fan laughed mirthlessly in the face of Wei Luo’s threats.

“In that case, I’m going to just sit here and wait. I’m going to see what this supposedly powerful family of Zhonghai is going to use to kill me.” His resolute words and majestic voice shook the entire hall like gold clattering to the floor.

Ye Fan then took a seat again.

He looked like he was really prepared to fight the Wei family of Zhonghai head on this time.

“Fine! That’s what you said! If you run before my family arrives, then you’re not a man!” Wei Luo purposely tried to agitate Ye Fan.

Initially, Wei Luo was afraid that Ye Fan might find a chance to escape before his family got here, but Ye Fan’s words were exactly what he hoped to hear.

But Xu Lei couldn’t help but worry, so she tried to advise Ye Fan softly, “Fan, don’t fall for his tricks. He’s trying to agitate you into staying here. If Wei Luo has already called his family for help, I’m sure the Wei family will be well prepared before coming. We’re not prepared for this at all, so if we fight the Wei family head on like this, we might suffer losses instead. Fan, I think we should avoid trouble for now and take time to plan a counterattack. The Wei family is really no ordinary family. Even the Lu and Xur families didn’t dare to provoke them in the past.”

It was precisely because Xu Lei had an understanding of the Wei family, she became wary and worried.

She was really afraid that the whole situation would reach the point of no return.

She knew that Ye Fan would really fight the Wei family head on, and that would cause a huge uproar within China.

That was exactly the situation that Xu Lei didn't want to see.

She didn't want to see him fight and fall out with others anymore.

Wherever war broke out, there would be casualties, and one side had to concede defeat.

Even though Ye Fan always emerged victorious all these years over numerous battles, Xu Lei was really afraid that one day, he would be the defeated one.

So she tried her best to avoid getting into any conflict with any party that was very powerful.

But fate often had a way of playing with people's lives.

The thing that Xu Lei was most worried about happened despite her best efforts.

"Lei, you don't have to worry. This one tiny Wei family is nothing but an ant to me. From today onwards, I'm going to make sure the whole world knows that my younger sister is not someone to be trifled with!"

His thunderous voice carried a great amount of authority that caused a strong wind to howl through the living room. His dominance, heroism and prestige were

contained in these words, causing everyone's hearts to tremble.

"Ha! Anyone can boast and say what they like! We're just ants? You're going to tell the world? Fuck you! You'll soon see how childish and ridiculous these words are to the Wei family!" Wei Luo continued to clench his teeth and berate Ye Fan even though he had been forced to kneel. He just hated how Ye Fan seemed so pretentious.

One commendable thing about Wei Luo was probably this pride of his. At least he didn't embarrass his family in that aspect.

But the rest of the people in the hall remained completely silent.

It seemed as though a solemn and oppressive air was weighing upon the Xu family estate.

It felt as though they were experiencing the strong winds that preceded an imminent storm.

They looked in shock and surprise at the young man who was still able to remain calmly seated.

They were really curious now. Was this young man from the countryside named Ye Fan really afraid of nothing at all?

Wei Luo already said that his family was on the way, but Ye Fan was still so calm and steady.

Was he really not going to plan his escape?

Was he truly confident of winning?

Chapter 1521 Wei Family Meeting

Or was he just putting up a brave front?

None of them knew the answer.

Meanwhile, miles away in Zhonghai, it was already evening time and the red sun was slowly setting in the west.

The river waters were dyed a dreamy red by the rays of the evening sun.

Huge ships sounded their horns loudly as they sailed down the river.

The roads of the city were full of cars.

Many pedestrians walked along the streets.

Zhonghai constantly reflected how busy and lively it was.

Right by the very valuable land next to the Huangpu River stood an enormous estate.

Whenever pedestrians walked past, they would glance towards the estate.

Some women in particular, fantasized about getting married into this family and becoming a rich man's wife.

This enormous estate belonged to the most powerful family in Zhonghai, the Wei family.

A humming sound could be heard on the estate's private H-pad.

A row of men were standing in front of a huge helicopter and reporting to the head of the Wei family.

“Mr Wei, don’t worry, we will carry out your orders accordingly. We will head to Yanjing and bring your son back in one good piece. We will also return with the dead body of the man who offended him,” said an old man with white hair.

The old man spoke in a low and calm voice, but he exuded an authority that could make one shudder.

“I will leave it to you then, Grandmaster Han.” The head of the Wei family, Wei Chen, cupped his fists and spoke politely to the old man.

His tone of voice was filled with respect for the old man.

Powerful men were respected everywhere they went.

Even a rich and powerful family with a long history like the Wei family respected an extremely powerful man like this old man with white hair.

After a brief exchange, the white haired old man boarded the helicopter with several others and headed straight for Yanjing.

Shortly after he sent the men off, Wei Chen received a call.

After hanging up, Wei Chen gave instructions to his niece, Wei Lu, who was standing next to him. “Lu, tell all the highest ranking members of the family to gather in the meeting room in one hour!”

“Even if they have to fly, they’d better get here on time. This is a matter of the family’s future, so nobody is allowed to be absent,” said Wei Chen in a stern voice.

“Uncle Chen, what’s wrong? Did something happen?” asked Wei Lu worriedly.

Wei Chen didn’t say much and just replied her simply, “Your father is back.”

One hour later, the meeting room was filled with people.

The only people allowed in this room were members of the family who held high positions within the family business.

“What do you think happened? Why were we called over in such a hurry? I was halfway through a meeting.”

“I was on drip in the hospital and I had to get it removed halfway to get here in time. I wonder what could possibly be so urgent. Did something go wrong in Yanjing?”

Wei Luo’s plan to conquer Yanjing wasn’t a secret within the family.

In fact, he had gotten the support and agreement of many in the family, so a lot of them knew about this.

Now that an urgent meeting had been called, many of them guessed it had something to do with this.

“We should stop speculating and just wait for the head of the family to tell us.”

Everyone who had rushed over were discussing among

themselves in the meeting room, and a number of them were quite unhappy about this sudden meeting.

They had been called over in such a hurry, and hadn't been able to make any preparations for their absence at all.

"He's here, he's here!"

A flurry of footsteps came from outside the door.

Wei Chen soon walked into the room with wide strides and a solemn expression on his face.

There was one more person behind him.

He was dressed in a black coat and high boots, and looked a lot like Wei Chen.

To most people, this man in black was probably a stranger to them.

But to the highest authority of the Wei family, this well-travelled looking man in black was no small fry.

This was Wei Guang, Wei Chen's younger brother and second-in-charge of the Wei family!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Because of the nature of his job, the public didn't know much about Wei Guang and only knew him as the younger brother of the head of the Wei family.

But this name could strike fear in the hearts of the Wei family members.

This man was in charge of collating information from both within and outside of the family.

He collected information on all their business partners and rivals, and found out everything there was to know about them.

He also watched over everything the highest positions of the family said and did, and checked if they were doing anything illegal or improper.

Wei Guang's existence was a double edged sword.

He could both slaughter his own family as well as other potential threats coming from outside the family.

A large majority of the decisions that the Wei family made were done according to the information or suggestions that Wei Guang made.

That was how important this person was to the entire family.

On top of that, Wei Guang was impartial even to his own family. His own son had gone against the rules set by the family, so he had been removed from his high position, sent away from Zhonghai and transferred to a faraway place.

That was also why the Wei family was rather afraid of Wei Guang.

So when Wei Guang appeared in the meeting room, everyone immediately fell silent.

Many of them were wondering why Wei Guang was here at this time.

Had he caught hold of someone's weakness again?

"Looks like someone's in trouble again..." Several members of the family murmured to themselves and shook their heads silently.

Wei Guang's presence never meant good news.

The last time he attended a meeting, it was to expose the deeds of an elder who was an uncle to Wei Guang.

Nobody knew who was next.

"Is everyone here?" asked Wei Chen in a deep voice as he took his position at the highest chair of the room and looked around.

The meeting room remained silent as nobody responded.

"I suppose everyone's here. In that case, Guang, you can start the meeting." Wei Chen left the rest of the meeting to his younger brother.

It was Wei Guang who wanted this meeting.

Not even Wei Chen knew what his brother wanted to say.

But judging from Wei Guang's tone of voice and expression, Wei Chen could guess that he had some very important information to announce.

Wei Guang walked to the front.

The atmosphere of the room grew tense and heavy even before he spoke.

"Everyone, sorry for the urgent meeting. But this is a very important matter, so I have no choice but to do this." After saying a few words of formality, Wei Guang's voice grew icy.

He looked up at the rest of the people in the room and continued, "I'm not sure if you heard about how some time ago, the power balance in Yanjing went through a major change. Several powerful families and businesses had been wiped out or replaced."

A number of family members nodded after hearing this.

"We know about that. Some years ago, there was someone who called himself the King of Yanjing, wasn't there? I think they called him Mr Chu. The family that held the last place among the four great families of Yanjing, the Xu family, as well as one of the three up and coming families, the Xue family, both belong to him. Over the past few years, this Mr Chu has become more and more powerful within Yanjing, and he seems to command more and more authority."

"That's right. We've also heard that the current head of the Xu family, Xu Lei, is this Mr Chu's mistress."

"Over the last few years, this Xu Lei has become more

and more ambitious and complacent with the support of Mr Chu.”

“She actually tried to expand her business into Zhonghai last year.”

“But the Wei family blocked her expansion, so after she apologized to us, she went back to Yanjing with her tail between her legs.”

“Haha!”

Some people in the meeting room started laughing merrily.

Their faces were filled with pride and arrogance.

Even those who weren't laughing smiled equally complacently. Their sense of superiority could be felt even without them saying anything.

They looked like they didn't have any regard for this Mr Chu or the Xu and Xue families at all.

The moment the Wei family put their foot down, they all had to obediently toe the line.

But Wei Guang shook his head. “I'm not talking about this. The Xu family is pretty powerful, but they are a fallen family and are no match for our family even at their peak. As for the Xue family, they're just nouveau riche and aren't worth my efforts to investigate personally. I'm here to talk about the Lu and Xur families.”

Everyone was stunned by these words.

Chapter 1522 They Call Him Mr Chu

“The Lu and Xur families?”

“You mean the two true blue aristocratic families of Yanjing?”

Wei Guang nodded. “That’s them. Perhaps you didn’t notice, but the two families went through a major change more than a year ago. The head of the Lu family, Lu He, was stripped of his position and transferred elsewhere, and his entire family quietly moved out of their family home in Yanjing.”

“The patriarch of the Xur family, Xur Jun-Lin, died very suddenly, while both the head of the family and his second-in-charge were thrown into prison. These two immensely powerful families fell from grace overnight.”

What?!

“The Lu family moved out quietly?”

“The heads of the Xur family are in prison?!”

“Mr Xur Jun-Lin is actually dead?”

“How...how could this be?”

“When did this happen? Why didn’t we know about it at all?”

“What on earth happened?”

Wei Guang’s words left everyone in the meeting room shuddering in shock.

Their eyes and mouths fell open in disbelief.

Even though Yanjing and Zhonghai were not right next to one another, the Lu and Xur families were two of the most powerful families in the entire country, so they had come into contact with them frequently over the years.

When Xur Jun-Lin was the head of the family, the Xur and Wei families were very closely connected.

One of the sons of the Wei family had married a daughter of the Xur family too.

The Wei family knew a lot about these two families since they were on par with one another.

They never thought that two such families would go through such a major transformation overnight.

This really bewildered them, and also made them sit up warily.

“It’s only normal that none of you know about it, because all news about this matter has been sealed off. It took me a long time to find out their current status too. During this time, I started to investigate this matter. I too, wanted to know why these two powerful families fell from grace despite having held power for so long. I only found out the real reason after I paid Jiangdong a visit this time.” Wei Guang’s expression was solemn as his low voice echoed in the meeting room.

“Tell us what’s the reason!”

“Is there someone with godly powers or something?!”

“Not even our family could possibly trample on these two families of Yanjing without causing our own downfall.”

Everyone looked up and asked Wei Guang about this matter worriedly.

They were both curious and anxious.

Wei Chen's expression also became very stern as he furrowed his brows.

Had some power suddenly risen within China?

But Wei Guang didn't say anything.

He got someone to hang a gigantic poster on the wall.

The poster showed a young man.

He was very slim and his eyes were deep.

He was standing along the side of a lake with his arms folded behind his back.

His icy gaze looked into the distance and seemed to be able to see through everything.

"This...this is..." Everyone was confused.

Wei Guang said in a deep voice, "This is him. This is the king of Jiangdong, Ye Fan. They call him Mr Chu!"

Everyone gasped immediately.

They nearly forgot to breathe.

Wei Chen's niece, Wei Lu, was so shocked that she covered her lips with a hand.

“How...”

“How can this be?”

“A young man like him...is so powerful?”

“He was powerful enough to topple top tier aristocratic families with centuries of history?!”

Everyone in the meeting room was exclaiming in disbelief.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Wei Guang was unsurprised by everyone's shock.

Even Wei Guang found it unbelievable when he learned of this previously.

"The fact is anything is possible. I have checked with several parties, so this information can't be wrong. The Lu and Xur families suddenly collapsed thanks to this man," Wei Guang spoke expressionlessly in a deep tone.

"That doesn't make sense. How can a young man be that powerful? Also, Jiangdong is just some backwater compared to Yanjing. How could someone from a tiny place like Jiangdong overturn the Yanjing elites? Don't tell me the young man comes from an even more powerful family? Could he be from the Mo clan?" asked someone from the crowd.

Very few families in China were capable of destroying the Lu and Xur clans outrightly, and the Wei family could barely be counted as one of them.

The other family was the Mo family, leader of the elites of Yanjing, which kept a low profile and was mysterious.

All these years, they were rarely involved in the mundane world's conflicts but kept their position as leader of the elite families in Yanjing.

Before the Wei family patriarch died, he visited Yanjing annually to pay his respects during the Lunar New Year.

Also, he said that no other family in China could compare to them other than the Mo family.

He warned all the Wei family's progeny to never provoke

the Mo clan.

Regardless of how powerful the Wei family became, they kept a respectful distance from the Mo clan.

Hence, the Wei family had businesses all over the country except for Yanjing.

They were fearful of threatening the Mo family's interests.

Now that the Lu and Xur families were destroyed overnight, everyone naturally thought Ye Fan was related to the Mo family.

Wei Guang shook his head once more. "I investigated Mr Chu thoroughly. He comes from a very humble background. He was brought up in the countryside by his mother before he married into the Qiu family."

The entire Wei family was shocked to hear what Wei Guang said.

The eldest daughter of the Wei family, Wei Lu, opened her eyes wide in shock.

It was unbelievable that the man who destroyed two elite families in one fell swoop was from the countryside and a live-in husband.

Wei Lu found this information shockingly dramatic.

"D-doesn't this only happen in fiction?" asked Wei Lu gently with her voice trembling.

She was suddenly curious about the young man.

She really wanted to meet this legendary Mr Chu and find out what he was like.

Wei Lu wasn't alone. The rest of the Wei family felt the same way.

He had started out as a humble live-in husband but eventually trampled the Lu and Xur families under his feet. Anyone would have been shocked by this unexpected twist.

"Uncle, did you send Grandpa Han to handle someone called Mr Chu?" asked Wei Lu worriedly as she turned to look at Wei Chen when she suddenly recalled something.

Wei Chen waved his hand nonchalantly as he replied, "I told Grandmaster Han to take care of a Mr Chu from Yanjing. The man your father is talking about is a different the one from Jiangdong, so don't worry."

Wei Lu nodded in relief.

Wei Guang suddenly opened his eyes wide and said anxiously, "Chen, what did you say you did? Did you say you sent someone to the capital to handle the King of Yanjing?"

"That's right. I was about to tell you about it. Wei Luo met with some trouble in Yanjing. A few hours ago, he asked for help, saying the King of Yanjing has showed up. All the martial artists he brought to Yanjing have been killed, so I sent Grandmaster Han this time. Since we have been eyeing the Yanjing market for a long time, we can take over his territory if we kill the King of Yanjing with overwhelming force," said Wei Chen confidently in a calm tone as though everything was in his control.

Chapter 1523 Why Panic?

The moment Wei Chen finished his sentence, Wei Guang instantly became anxious.

He jumped from his seat and shouted at his older brother anxiously, "Are you stupid? Call Grandmaster Han now and tell him to come back. Otherwise, it will be too late."

Wei Chen was instantly confused before he said confidently, "Guang, what do you mean? Why panic? He is just the current King of Yanjing and an up-and-coming fighter. Do you think I can't handle him? Just relax. I always pick my battles. Although he has gained quite a reputation in recent years, he relies on the Xu and Xue families. Both those clans combined can't outdo us. Last year, the Xu family even apologized to us because we were too powerful."

"Exactly. He is just an up-and-coming martial artist. We can take him down in a second."

"Why panic?"

The rest of the elders chimed in.

However, Wei Guang interrupted anxiously, "You shouldn't have done that. The King of Yanjing is the same man who destroyed two Yanjing elite families, Ye Fan!"

What?

It felt as though a huge boulder had fallen into the sea and left a tsunami in its wake.

In an instant, everyone was dumbstruck.

The place fell into a complete silence!

Wei Lu opened her eyes wide while Wei Chen's face twitched.

All the elders of the Wei family gasped in shock.

"A-are they the same man?"

"Heavens!"

"How could a young man control both Jiangdong and Yanjing?"

"How is that possible?"

"Is Mr Chu a god or something?"

Everyone in the family trembled from hearing the news. They couldn't believe someone was capable of doing that.

Wei Chen couldn't help feeling worried after hearing the news from his brother. He frowned hard as he looked at Wei Guang and asked. "Is your information accurate? Is the King of Yanjing really Mr Chu from Jiangdong?"

"It's absolutely true. The head of the Xu family, Xu Lei, used to be the CEO of Hongqi Group in Jiangdong and was the goddess of Jiangdong. She probably got to know Ye Fan back then. She was later called back to the family to go through with an arranged marriage. However, Mr Chu went to Yanjing on his own in a fury to stop this! He made a name for himself at the battle of Yanqi Lake and all of Yanjing submitted to him after that. Also, he made Xu Lei the Queen of Yanjing to run the

Chapter 1523 Why Panic?

place for him. Both these Mr Chus are the same man!”

Wei Guang was so anxious that he was practically roaring.

He knew that the family wanted to control Yanjing, so he investigated the downfall of the Lu and Xur clans. While he was at it, he checked on the King of Yanjing since he had risen through the ranks swiftly.

Wei Guang suffered a major shock after learning the truth.

After Wei Guang learned the truth, he hurried straight home to stop his family from having a head-on conflict with Ye Fan.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Wei Guang didn't think he would end up being too late.

However, Wei Chen didn't seem worried after learning Ye Fan's true identity. Instead, he sneered, "So what if they are the same person? Our family isn't like the Lu and Xur families. Even if he can destroy the Lu and Xur clans, it doesn't mean he can defeat us. Guang, don't you know how powerful Grandmaster Han is? His status as a grandmaster is enough to outdo Ye Fan's identity. We have nothing to fear unless he is from the Mo family."

Wei Chen spoke with the tone of a leader.

Although the Wei family from Zhonghai wasn't a martial arts family, they were powerful enough to know about the abilities of martial artists.

All these years, the Wei family spent a lot of effort to get Grandmaster Han and Kong Ming on their side.

Grandmaster Han was on the grandmaster ranking and was one of the top ten in the country.

Other than the Mo family, they feared no one with the help of these powerful grandmasters.

No matter how astounding Ye Fan was, he was too young.

He didn't think Ye Fan was capable of defeating any of the top ten grandmasters of China.

"You are taking it for granted. You think too highly of our family and underestimate Mr Chu. Has it ever crossed your mind that the Lu and Xur families had probably hired grandmasters back then too?" said Wei Guang

deeply as he shook his head. His voice was filled with powerlessness and worry.

“What are you trying to say?” Wei Chen’s lips twitched when he heard what Wei Guang said. An ominous feeling rose in Wei Chen’s heart.

Wei Guang didn’t explain it right away. Instead, he talked about how legendary Mr Chu was.

“Mr Chu held his wedding in Jiangdong and invited people from everywhere. At his wedding, the Xur family surrounded him with troops, and the head of the Lu family, Lu Cang-Qiong, even came personally to threaten him. Jiangdong government officials and its city leaders came to pay their respects. All the powerful men from the political and commerce circles were present.”

“On this fateful day, two elite clans tried to kill Mr Chu. Li Hong-Ze, the second most powerful man in China, also came to make Ye Fan a pillar of the nations and bestow Ye Fan his title as the Unrivalled. The message that came along with this title was, ‘For as long as the rivers flow and the mountains stand, may he remain unrivaled in his strength and prowess. For as long as the moon rises and the sun falls, may he find no match for his power and abilities!’”

BOOM...

Wei Guang spoke resoundingly, especially when he got to the last part.

His few thunderous words exploded in everyone's hearts.

Wei Chen, Wei Lu, and the rest of the Wei family were

dumbstruck.

Everyone stared dead straight in shock as they gasped.

Their faces froze, and they looked utterly wretched.

The country's second in command came with well-wishes from the leader of the nation to bestow him the title.

Mr Chu must be a truly powerful and impossibly capable person to have deserved such honor.

Wei Lu's heart was filled with surprise with fear as her lips parted. Her exquisite face was astounded, and she felt curious about the young man.

Although Wei Lu had never seen him before, Mr Chu's name was deeply emblazoned in her heart.

Wei Lu swore in her heart that she must see Mr Chu with her own eyes one day.

She wanted to see exactly how powerful he was.

Could such an outstanding young man exist on earth?

But unlike Wei Lu, Wei Chen was terrified.

His face was ghastly pale while his legs trembled with panic and terror in his eyes.

A pillar of the nation?

The Unrivaled?

Chapter 1524 Ye Fan's True Identity

Heavens!

It finally dawned on Wei Chen how powerful the man fighting their family was!

“No wonder the Lu family didn't dare to say a peep when they were driven out of Yanjing. No wonder the deputy head of the Xur family got thrown into jail even though they were a military family. He's turned out to be a supreme grandmaster. Ye Fan? Mr Chu? The Unrivaled? Pillar of the nation? He is certainly powerful enough to crush both those elite families,” sighed Wei Chen sadly.

Wei Lu and the others could understand the gravitas of what the leader of the nation said about Ye Fan. They didn't understand what it meant for Ye Fan to be a supreme grandmaster.

But Wei Chen understood.

Even though the Mo family kept a low profile, they could remain powerful in the country and stayed as leader of the elite families all these years because they had the support of a supreme grandmaster.

If a family had the protection of a supreme grandmaster, they could become one of the most powerful clans in the country.

That was the power of a supreme grandmaster!

A supreme grandmaster could guarantee years of glory.

The moment he learned that Ye Fan was a supreme grandmaster, Wei Chen knew that the Wei family was done for!

“Chen, now is not the time to regret. Get in touch with Grandmaster Han before it's too late. Tell him to stop before things get worse. Otherwise, the Wei family is dead meat. Do you know the Unrivalled Grandmaster recently slaughtered the Lv family? The entire West Lake ended up stained in blood. If we don't take care of this swiftly, this entire river will end up stained by the blood of the Wei family.”

Wei Guang was even more fearful of Ye Fan as he had made a thorough investigation of the young man.

Although Mr Chu was young, he was a true blue killing machine.

In Jiangbei alone, more than a hundred men had died at his hands. So if the Wei family pissed him off, the entire family would probably cease to exist.

“Get me the phone now! Hurry up!”

Wei Chen seemed to finally grasp the gravity of the situation, so he anxiously sent for the phone with his face blanched.

In an instant, dozens of phones came flying towards him.

Wei Chen was not alone. The entire family was clearly panicking.

They assumed that the so-called King of Yanjing was just a toothless tiger, but he turned out to be a hornets' nest.

If things went awry, the Wei clan would perish!

Wei Chen hurriedly got in touch with Grandmaster Han.

However, no one answered the phone regardless of the number of times Wei Chen tried calling.

Just as Wei Chen was about to give up and fly to Yanjing, the phone rang.

“Hello, who is this?”

“Who the hell are you? I'm Wei Chen. Hurry up and pass the phone to Grandmaster Han,” roared Wei Chen anxiously.

The moment the man heard it was Wei Chen, he handed the phone to Grandmaster Han.

“Mr Wei, I just got off the flight. Don't worry. I will definitely slaughter him. Just sit back at home and wait to collect his body. I will also bring Young Master Wei back in one piece,” said an old man with confidence outside the airport.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

“No wait, Grandmaster Han. I...” said Wei Chen anxiously over the phone.

Before Wei Chen could finish his sentence, Grandmaster Han interrupted, “Mr Wei, please spare the formalities. If you want to thank me, it has to wait until after I kill the King of Yanjing. Enough. I am in a hurry. After I slaughter him, I have to make a trip to the Mo family.”

Grandmaster Wei hung up without giving Wei Chen the chance to speak.

“Hello? Grandmaster Han? Don’t hang up,” shouted Wei Chen worriedly. However, he had already hung up the phone.

“Does the old geezer intend on getting all of us killed?” muttered Wei Chen angrily before he called again.

“Yes, Mr Wei? Didn't I tell you that I will defeat that nobody like a dog? Don't you trust me?” Grandmaster Han sounded a little annoyed.

Why did the Wei family keep calling him?

They clearly doubted his skill!

Anyone would be annoyed by this.

“Grandmaster Han, please stop. It's not that I don't trust you, but you are really not his match.” Wei Chen was so worried that the man would hang up on him again, so Wei Chen told him his intentions right away.

The old man frowned before he sneered. “That’s a joke! are you saying that I can't defeat that boy?” Grandmaster

Han suppressed the fury in his voice.

In the past, Wei Chen would have apologized by now.

After all, even those as powerful as the Wei family wouldn't dare to insult a grandmaster.

However, Wei Chen replied coldly, "Although he is young, he will kill you like he's slaughtering a chicken!"

Although Wei Chen's words were incapable of hurting Grandmaster Han physically, it hurt his pride, so the old man glared angrily.

"Wei Chen, what are you saying? I dare you to say that to me again!" said Grandmaster Han as he gritted his teeth and seethed with anger.

Wei Chen had clearly agitated the grandmaster.

"Grandmaster Han, don't be mad. You will thank me for stopping you in time when I tell you who he really is." Wei Chen went quiet briefly.

"Who is he?" asked the man in a grave voice. He was still furious.

"He's the seventh pillar of the nation, the Unrivalled."

What?

Wei Chen's words landed into the ocean like a huge boulder and left a flood in the old man's heart.

"W-who did you say he was? The King of Yanjing is actually the Unrivalled Grandmaster?" Grandmaster Han

almost shouted in surprise.

The old man was so startled by the news that he trembled with his eyes open wide.

He felt his soul was about to leave his body when he heard the name, the Unrivalled.

Heavens!

What was he doing?

How could he try to kill the Unrivalled Grandmaster?

That was as good as committing suicide.

Although Wei Chen belonged to the mundane world and might not have heard about the Unrivalled Grandmaster, as a grandmaster who held a position in the grandmaster ranking, he certainly knew who that was.

The Unrivalled Grandmaster killed two supreme grandmasters in the Amazon rainforest.

He pinned the new supreme grandmaster, Lv Song-Liang, to a pillar at West Lake.

He Chen from War God Castle and the other Chinese martial artists who attended the banquet all died in his hands.

Ye Fan's actions had already spread throughout the martial arts world.

Considering how vicious Ye Fan was, there was no way Grandmaster Han was going to provoke Ye Fan.

Chapter 1525 Killing You Is Like Killing Chickens

“That’s right. We only just found out that the King of Yanjing and the Unrivalled Grandmaster are the same person. So please stop trying to kill him. Can you go to the Xu family and apologize to the Unrivalled Grandmaster on our behalf? You have to find a way to make him release Wei Luo. If you can save Wei Luo, we will reward you well.”

Before Wei Chen finished his words, Grandmaster Han scolded him sternly, “Reward, my foot! Are you trying to kill me? Damn you! You almost killed me! Do you think you can just offend anyone you like? Do you really think you are the number one elite family in the country? To be honest, the Lv family was even more powerful than you. They were as strong as the Mo family. But look what happened to them! Their entire clan was massacred! Even though their only son escaped Ye Fan at the banquet, he was executed in the end! Not even the government could step in and save him. Do you think you are capable of fighting a supreme grandmaster? There is no way for you to kill him even if you were ten times stronger!”

“And now, you want me to beg him on your behalf? Beg, my ass! You should count yourself lucky that I didn’t slaughter you after sabotaging me!”

The old man’s face was livid as he cursed into the phone. He really wanted to kick Wei Chen to death.

Sending him to kill Ye Fan was the same as sentencing him to death.

The old man couldn't help feeling terrified just thinking about it.

Fortunately, he managed to stop just in time.

Otherwise, he would share the same fate as Lv Song-Liang.

After Grandmaster Han realized that the family had offended Ye Fan, he decisively severed ties with them.

Grandmaster Han ran off angrily after hanging up the phone.

Only a fool would hang around and get implicated by them.

It was certainly better to just stay alive.

He hadn't spent enough time with his family yet.

If anyone was interested in taking on this suicidal mission, they could go ahead.

Wei Chen was stunned to hear these words.

He never dreamed that things would turn out this way.

A grandmaster who held a position in the grandmaster ranking fled in disgrace the moment he found out his target was Ye Fan.

It was clear how reputable Ye Fan was in the martial arts world.

He felt hopeless.

He felt hopeless for a long time.

The entire hall was in silence.

The entire family was despondent.

They looked as though they were waiting to be executed.

“Guang, Grandmaster Han isn’t going to help anymore. What should we do now? Is our clan going to end up like the Lv family from Jiangbei?” Wei Chen panicked as he looked at his younger brother, Wei Guang.

The rest of the family looked upset as well.

All of them felt hopeless.

“What else can we do? We got ourselves into this mess. Are you expecting someone to save us? There is only one way out of this now. We have to go to Yanjing and apologize! Since we haven't started executing our plans for the capital, we still stand a chance to survive if we apologize sincerely. At the worst, we can make some sacrifices to save the family,” said Wei Guang in a deep tone as he shook his head.

Wei Chen trembled before he looked at his brother. “A-are you saying we have to give up Wei Luo?”

Wei Guang nodded. “If you want to save the family, you can only say that it was solely Wei Luo’s idea to cause trouble in Yanjing and had nothing to do with the clan. That way, the rest of the family can be saved.”

Chapter 1525 Killing You Is Like Killing Chickens



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



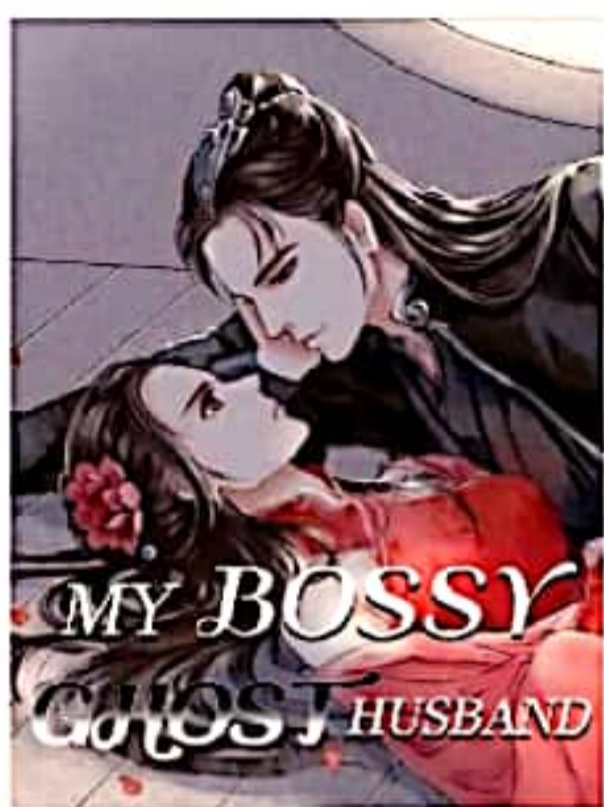
Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

To Be Continued

Other Readers Are Reading



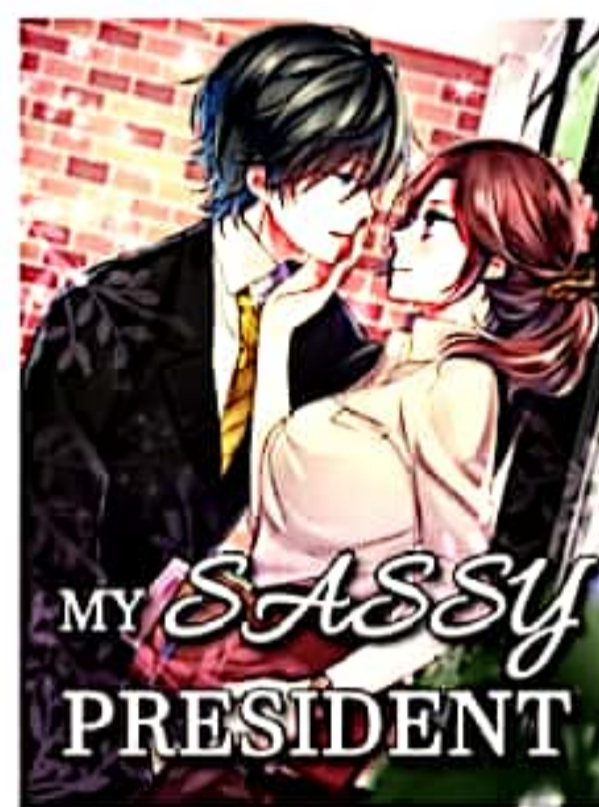
My Bossy ...



Irresistible ...



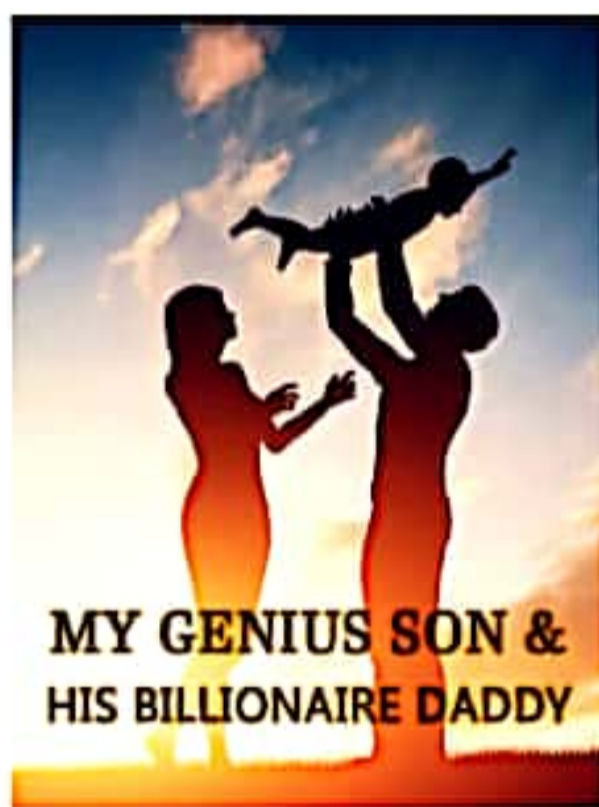
A Sensualist'...



My Sassy ...



Love for Life



My Genius ...



Thorny First ...



No More, No ...